

# Selections from the Cheon Seong Gyeong

Chosen by Michael Hentrich  
January 23, 2012

## BOOK 1 – TRUE GOD

Since God is the Original Being of true love, when one is connected to true love, everyone becomes part of one body. Parents are gods living in place of God on earth, husband and wife are mutual counterpart gods, and sons and daughters are little gods. p. 103 right side. Ch 2. Sec. 4.2.

The wonder of nature. p.109-112. Ch. 2, Sec. 5.3.

God created the angelic world at the same time as the human world. P.114. last Ch.2. Sec.5.5.

God spoke through angels to man in the O.T. age and worked through angels.

The God Jehovah, who appeared to Abraham, was also an angel. Originally, God, being without form, is invisible, but in Genesis three beings appeared as God, two going to judge Sodom and Gomorrah and the remaining one talking to Abraham as God (Genesis 18:1-18). Yet, they were angels sent by God, who commissioned them to work on His behalf. The people did not know this. P.118 bottom right side. Ch.3. Sec..2. (Better description of this on p. 120-121).

(Why there is a war among angels.) The evil Satan and good angels are fighting... God created the three archangels as servants for the unfallen Adam and Eve and entrusted Adam and Eve to them, asking the archangels to raise them by educating and protecting them. P. 119 right side. Ch.3. Sec. 1.3.

Since God created angels before creating Adam, today's religions are the creations of the angelic realm on earth. That is the religious sphere. P. 121 Ch.3. Sec. 2.2.

As servants, the believers of the Old Testament era wished to receive the benefits of being adopted children, and this is why they waited for the coming of the Messiah. In other words, their desire was to surmount the sorrowful circumstances of the servant and advance, through the Messiah, to the position of adopted child. The adopted child is entitled to receive the inheritance from the parents in the absence of a son or daughter of direct lineage. So, God's will, which oversaw the servant-level Old Testament Age, guided the people so that they could maintain the desire to transcend the servant's position and attain the benefits of welcoming God's will. This is why they kept longing for the privilege of leaving behind the lot of the servant and receiving God's inheritance. This is the philosophy of God's elect in Israel. P. 124 top right. Ch.3. Sec. 3.1.

Had Jesus not cured the sick, he would not have been killed. People die of sickness to pay the price for their ancestors' sins. Then why did he bring them back to life? Rev. Moon of the Unification Church could have cured hundreds of thousands of patients if he had tried. Even without someone curing their disease, lepers can be healed if they hear our words and delight in them. All kinds of diseases can be cured. P. 125 left, before 3.2. Ch.3. Sec.3.1.

On leaving the Old Testament Age and welcoming the new morning of the New Testament Age, Jesus declared God as the Father and elevated fallen people to the position of adopted child in order to bring them into a parent-child relationship with God. Adopted children are of a different lineage, but through the coming of the Lord, they were engrafted and thus able to call God "Father," with the title of son. You should know that the establishment of the parent-child relationship with God was a heavenly secret that could be accomplished by no one other than Jesus. When Jesus called God "Father," the priests and Pharisees, who were immersed in the Old Testament concepts of the time, heard it as a presumptuous word blaspheming God. You should know that Jesus' view of God as the Father was that revolutionary. Jesus went a step higher and introduced God's love. In the Old Testament Age, Moses introduced only the God of authority, God of power, and God of judgment, without being able to introduce the God of love. But, Jesus introduced love. Although he introduced the God of love and his own loving self, the people of his era did not accept him. P. 125. Ch.3. Sec.3.2.

God had the power to destroy or save Adam and Eve, but he couldn't. p. 136-7. Ch.4. Sec. 1.2.

How enraged God is when He looks down on us on earth! All human beings should have had His lineage, but Satan pushes them into a miserable state and scornfully jeers at God saying, "Your descendants are miserable." When Satan asks God, "How will You, with all Your omniscience and omnipotence, redeem this difficult situation?" God can only be silent. He has to pretend to be deaf though He can hear, pretend not to smell though He can smell, and pretend not to feel though He can feel. Have you ever thought about the misery of God throughout history? P. 139 last para. Ch.4. Sec. 2.1.

God can do anything at will, but because of the reality of unprincipled love His hands have been tied. No one knows how He suffers under such lasting regret and sorrow and how unimaginably weary He is.... In the established churches people say, "Oh! Holy, holy God! Oh! God of glory! Give me blessings." But God is not that kind of God. On the contrary, He is a miserable God, suffering in confinement. He can be liberated from His sorrowful situation only through the birth of a son. P. 144 bottom. Ch.4.Sec.3.2.

Why God cannot destroy Satan. p.144-6. Ch4. Sec. 4.1

Tens of tens of millions of years have passed since the creation of humankind. It is not just six thousand years as the Bible indicates based on the history of cultures recorded in its pages. Actually it has been tens of millions of years since God decided to begin the providence of salvation. P. 163 top left. Ch.4. Sec.6.2.

## BOOK 2 – TRUE PARENTS

Neither God nor Satan can end the war of good and evil; only True Adam, the Messiah. P197 top left.

There are two beings in the universe who claim to be great – God and Satan. These masters of good and evil are fighting against each other. They are waging a battle of good and evil over human beings. P.197 top left.

After the Messiah wins the individual victory, Satan will mobilize worldwide. The nations and the democratic world will join forces to attack him; he must fight against them and win. He must do this on the family and worldwide levels. In other words, he must win just as Jacob prevailed over the angel and just as Abel should have succeeded over Cain. This is a one-on-one fight. Now, all of Satan's world must be struck, and for this a representative nation is needed at the front. This nation is Korea. CIG. P. 198 left.

Democracy is not the ideal system. P. 205 left, p. 206 right. P. 209 bottom right.

True Parents would not appear unless the archangel was restored. They would not appear unless Adam was restored. Also, they would not appear unless the bride – that is, Eve – was restored. That is for sure. P. 206 left top.

Why do we need True Parents? By fulfilling their individual responsibility, True Parents can expel the worldwide Satan that is clinging to individuals. By establishing the family level indemnity condition and fulfilling our responsibility, Satan can automatically be restored through indemnity. Top left of p. 208.

Just because you have received the Blessing on earth does not mean that everything is finished. You must also pass through a church-level Blessing, a national-level Blessing and ultimately a world-level Blessing. You will need to go through these three stages. Why? So that you can effectively reach the point of total self-denial. Just because you have sons and daughters does not mean that they are your possessions. You must reach the point of total self-denial. These sons and daughters belong to God and True Parents. P. 228.

Since you are wild olive trees, you need to receive a branch of the true olive tree and be engrafted with it. Religions are meant to do the work of engrafting. This is Christian thought. This is why it is said that the marriage feast of the bride and bridegroom must occur on earth. p.236 3.2

Thus, Darwin's theory of evolution is not true but the logic of absorption through love can explain this. When a tiny creature serves by being absorbed as an element used to create beings of a higher order, how much will their value increase? p.239 sec. 3.5

Do not offer thanks for living a comfortable life. You must feel grateful for bearing a cross. If the remains of a defeated army are bleeding and rotting with a bad smell, who will make the funeral arrangements? Who will train them and turn them into a regular army? Also, if there is nothing to eat, what should be done? Should they just be killed off? No. You thought that by winning everything would become nice and smooth, but actually you will have to bear a bigger cross. Your time will come after you have resolved all that, after you have rebuilt it. You can live happily only after you have established a new family, a new nation and a new world. P.245 bottom right column

I am saying that we, on our own, should be able to indemnify the worries, pain, and sorrow that reach us, instead of giving them to God to bear. p.249 bottom left column.

And even though you may do your best, you should always have an apologetic heart towards heaven. p.254 left sec. 6.3.

Even if you went through the wilderness course, crossed the Jordan River, and fell in a fight with the seven tribes of Canaan, this would not be a victorious death. You can be an original person, worthy of a heavenly appointment from God, only after you have conquered the seven tribes of Canaan and established a new nation of Israel there. Otherwise, it is the same as staying in paradise; you will not be able to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. p.254 sec. 6.4

True children should be able to offer their lives and everything they have for the sake of God's Son and should be grateful even if they themselves end up in hell. P.259 left top.

In the future, the original language for scholars will be Korean. The Korean language will be the original language. P.260 bottom right.

The Old Testament Age was the age of finding God's people by establishing all things; the New Testament Age was the age of finding the Parents by sacrificing the sons and daughters; and the Completed Testament Age is the age of liberating God by sacrificing the Parents' family. P.261 bottom left

What is the local-level breakthrough (*tong ban gyeokpa*) we are pursuing? We must unite South and North and offer the Republic of Korea to God as the homeland of all humankind. This must be done in God's name and in True Parents' name, centered on the achievement of victory in all nations. p.264 bottom left

It is for this reason that we are now like a group of beggars. Why beggars? Because we already offered everything decades ago. P.264 bottom left

We must restore the ownership to the throne of God, the Original Parent, so that Korea will emerge from this as the first ancestor nation among all nations throughout history. Working to bring this about is my final purpose of love. p. 264 top right

The divided mind is being made one and its worldwide fruits are being harvested. Upon what base are they being harvested? Based on the love of True Parents. True parent, true teacher and true owner are the essence of the Three Subjects Principle. With this three-subjects philosophy, even prominent people in the world are certain to kneel down before me, saying, "Please teach us!" The politicians of the world who used to claim to be owners – false owners – all have some connection with me. The Three Subjects Principle refers to me. p.269 middle right side.

You do not become true parents just by having sons and daughters. You must give birth to them and raise them. Sons and daughters should depend on their mother and father. You must teach them. P.269 top left.

With the appearance of sons and daughters of Jesus' direct lineage, a kingship and a true royal family would have finally begun on this earth and created one world.

This right of kingship would not initially have been a right of kingship for the whole world but one starting in a single family. From the family, it would have advanced beyond being a family kingship, to have become a tribal, a national, a worldwide and a cosmic kingship. Then there would be no need for any Christian denominations or ministers. The Vatican would not be needed. Democracy would not be needed. Democracy is an ideology based only on brotherhood. This is why people are fighting. Brothers are fighting among themselves. Hence, the ideology upholding brotherhood should return to a parent-centered ideology and from there to the God-centered ideology of Godism.

What is the parent-centered ideology? It is the character of true parents that Adam and Eve were to have fulfilled on earth. Next, what is the God-centered ideology? Since True Parents are the horizontal parents, we also need the vertical parent. Therefore, the vertical parent-centered ideology is the God-centered ideology. What we term as head-wing thought is the true parent-centered ideology and the vertical God-centered ideology. That is how it works. P.270 section 1.4

The heavenly side will gain supremacy. Through our declaration of True Parents, the communist world stands in the position to collapse completely, and Satan will decline rapidly from now on. He will not fall at the angle with which he ascended; he will plunge straight down because this is not Satan's path; it is True Parents' path. P275 right side.

When I started out as an individual, all the individuals in the satanic world opposed me. When I went based on my family, all the families in the satanic world opposed me. When the Unification Church was pursuing the formation of a tribe and people, the tribes and peoples all opposed us. They all opposed us based on whatever conditions had been established. But as I triumphed in this process, America submitted and the Soviet Union came to the brink of collapse; so there is nothing left to attack us. P275 left. Section 2.4.3

What is the original standard that enables us to pierce through and continue going up? It is True Parents' teaching. P276 upper right column.

Viewed historically, everyone is a part of one family, but Adam and Eve are the ancestors of True Parents. When a nation is formed, who are the ancestors of the nation? They are True Parents. Who are the ancestors of the family? They are True Parents. Who are the ancestors of the world? True Parents. P.276 upper right column.

This Messiah, who had come as the Savior, was killed by humankind, by his sons and daughters, by the people. How great is the sin of the country that imprisoned and killed the true parent? They could not escape from this. This is why the people of Israel have wandered around in other lands for two thousand years. When we look back through history, we see that many among their number were stabbed to death, or kicked by horses, or have disappeared like the dew through resentment or curses. After barely making it through two thousand years of history, they managed to create an independent nation with the support of America.

The devil killed our parents, the devil's sons and daughters killed the second true parent, and devils throughout the entire world have attempted to mobilize all the ideologies and systems to kill the third true parent. P.279 bottom right to p.280. section 2.5.

True Parents have fought against the satanic world, won back everything, risen up, and reached the stage where the democratic and communist worlds will collapse. Thus, since they have created these victorious conditions, on the basis of that proclamation the satanic world will come to an end. What does it mean for the satanic world to come to an end? It means being liberated from Satan. P.283 right. Sec.2.6

Based on that oneness of heart, people should connect with the heavenly lineage, become a branch and leaf of the tree whose root is God, and become an incarnation of God, thereby establishing an absolute standard on earth to subjugate Satan. Only then will the history of restoration move forward. P.284 end of sec.2.6

This is why this is the end of the world. Everything in the spirit world that started with the love of false parents will come to an end and there will be a new world centered on the new love of True Parents. With this as the soil, a new world will spring up. With this proclamation, those who unconditionally oppose our Unification Church in the future will all fall sick, little by little, and collapse. They will wither away like trees that have lost their sap and immediately become food for beetles. P.285 left. Sec 2.7.1

Lifestyle is grounded in culture and accompanied by habits. P.285 both columns sec.2.7.1

What is the relationship between Jesus and True Parents? Jesus is in the position of the Son, while True Parents are in the position of the Parents. I have said that Buddha is my disciple, Jesus is my disciple and Confucius is my disciple. Spiritual people can know everything if they pray. Wait and see. The Unification Church will be the center of religious unification in the end, correcting the standard for presidents, prime ministers, and all the proud politicians of the nations. This is my work, to accomplish this not by force, but by natural submission. P.291 bottom left. Sec. 2.9.

After investing your life, you should not think, “I died because of God and because of the Unification Church.” We must sacrifice ourselves. You cannot say, “I did this much but the church does not recognize me” or “I have followed the Unification Church for dozens of years, but Father does not recognize me.” P. 295 bottom left. Sec. 3.3

There is no one who can say, “Rev. Moon is not the True Parent.” Let Christian ministers try coming before me. Among our country’s president and party leaders, let those who can say, “He is not!” step forward. Let the president of the United States, or anyone who rules a nation on this earth and speaks big words, step forward and argue that I am not the True Parent. Not even those people will be able to move an inch when they listen to my words. P.295 right. Sec. 3.3

Jesus could not proclaim himself as the True Parent. That was the problem. If he had, Christianity would not have had to shed blood. Jesus himself would have been able to indemnify ten times as much as what Christians were able to restore through their shedding of their own blood. But since he was unable to proclaim himself as the True Parent, Satan has been in control until a global standard could be revealed. P.296. right. Sec. 3.3

Thus I have been giving directions to the Soviet Union, the worldwide archangel, and to China, the Asian-level archangel. Then, by creating oneness between the archangel and Eve, with Japan in the position of Eve, I will bring Kim Il-sung to submission. I am bringing these people into oneness and then using that as a vehicle to move forward. If I can declare the Federation for World Peace in Pyongyang in this way, how good that would be! I will call Gorbachev, Jiang Zemin, the Japanese prime minister, President Bush, and so forth, to come. There is no one in Korea but me who says such things. Can the president do this? What will it take to do this? I have already laid that kind of foundation. P.297. top left. Sec. 3.3

Wearing a cross means being a Christian. Carrying True Parents’ picture signifies being a son and daughter of True Parents; first the symbol, then the image and then the substance.

These people will be protected because they enter the formation-stage realm of formation, growth, and completion. For this reason, the tribal messiah should prepare pictures for them. To break through on the local level means to have people put up True Parents’ picture.

If they will only put up True Parents’ picture, then they will surely attend workshops. When they attend a workshop and become inspired, you can tell them, “You cannot buy this content even with a huge sum of money, so please make an offering according to how much you think it is worth!” You can use the money to cover the cost of your local activities. Give the photos out to all those who have been to America for education. P.299. right. Sec. 4.1.

Until now has been the time when Abel had to sacrifice for Cain for the sake of the restoration of the right of the eldest son. Because of this, the spirit world has been using the earthly world. But on the thirty-first Children’s Day, the positions of the spirit world and the physical world are being completely reversed. Now that the right of the eldest son has been restored, Adam becomes the center and the eldest son. So the archangel has to listen to Adam and attend him. P.300. Sec. 4.2.

On this earth, in order to take back all the authority Satan has had, you just have to raise the flag, hang up a picture of True Parents and register. This will change your affiliation. Thus, what I am especially emphasizing in our movement is to display True Parents’ pictures and raise the flag. It has already been three years. I started this campaign because I knew that such a time would come. This is why I am asking you to have people fill out membership application forms. When you receive the membership forms, greet those who sign them, saying, “Please do well.” Satan will not receive salvation unless he submits to Adam. The next step is to attend the Parents. P.301. bottom left. Sec. 4.2.

Thus people should think, “Since we have hung up these pictures, as husband and wife we cannot quarrel in front of other people. What is it that Rev. Moon has taught...?” They will also teach their sons and daughters, saying, “You kids, you cannot do that in front of Rev. Moon.” If they honor the pictures more than they do the pictures of their own parents, their ancestors will come and honor True Parents as their ancestors. It will be an altar upon which their ancestors come and honor that house. Because there is a way they can receive the blessings of the heavenly world through this, at three o’clock in the morning, although you may be asleep, they will expel all the satanic devils around your family and relatives. You must also put up the flag. When you display the picture and raise the flag, everything will be done. When you hang my picture in your room and raise the Unification Church flag, you will be a family member in the heavenly nation.

I will make such people family members in the heavenly nation. There have been many people who met with misfortune because they cursed someone who was raising the flag. This is very mysterious. There was even an incident in which someone who wagged a finger at me got a disease in that finger and was cured only after praying and repenting with his hand elevated for several nights. Why do such things happen? When heavenly fortune comes, it cannot be blocked by some individual fortune. This is the path of absolute destiny. Although, on the path of fortune, the four directions of east, west, north, and south can change places, on the path of absolute destiny above is above and below is below left is left and right is right. They cannot be changed around. It is because the time has come in the Republic of Korea that I am telling you to have people put up those pictures. P.302. Bottom left. Sec. 4.2.

Those who know real love do not need to learn anything in Spirit World. P.311 left. Sec. 1.

It is only logical to define true love as that which loves the very lowest thing more than something high. P.312 top right. Sec. 1

A person who has received grace and is receiving love from God looks beautiful. P.312 left middle. Sec. 1

Who is the owner of love? It is not man or woman. It is God Himself. P.313. bottom of left column. Sec. 1

Jesus once said, "I am the way and the truth and the life: no one comes to the Father, but by me." However, he left one thing out, the most important thing of all; love. He should have said "I am the way and the truth and the life and the love..." but he left out "love." These words should be inserted into the Bible. p.314 end of Sec. 1.

Those who feel ashamed even after giving (love) are truly the owners of love. P.314-5 Ch. 1 Sec.2.

There is no way to be prosperous without love. P.315 top left. Sec. 2.

In the case of true love, however, the more it is in motion, rather than being used up, the greater it becomes. P.315. middle left. Sec. 2.

The word "love" is truly mighty. There is a Korean saying that "One well-spoken word can clear away a large debt." What that means is that with just one word you can indemnify something. Even if you have a debt of billions of dollars, one word of love can more than indemnify the debt. P.315 bottom left. Sec. 2.

Even God, the great almighty Creator, has to bow His head to love. P.315 top right. Sec.2.

Where is the root of true love kept? Even though God is all-knowing and all-powerful, the root of love is not kept within Him. Although the omniscient and omnipotent God is the central figure of true love, He does not want to keep the root of love within Himself. God wants love to take root in the person who is to be the object of love. P.315 bottom right. Sec.2.

As God is the origin of love, the only beings qualified to be partners in that love are human beings. P.316 left. Sec. 2.

Then which comes first, life or love? Which is it? For God, love did not exist before He did; love came to exist after God existed. That is why, for God, life comes first and love comes second, but for human beings love comes first and life comes second. P.316 top right. Sec. 2.

God's purpose in creating Adam and Eve was to feel joy. This was not the joy of looking at them, or speaking with them, or touching them, but a joy based on love. He created us for the attainment of joy. P.316 right. Sec. 2.

All people hope that their partner in love will have thousands of times the value, or infinitely more value, than they have. In the same way, God wishes for human beings, His partners in love, to be beings of infinite value. When someone is perfected, he or she achieves a divine nature, thus becoming as flawless as the Heavenly Father and attaining the same value. P.317 mid right. Sec. 2.

Eternal life does not lie in a man or a woman. It does not lie in God. You must clearly understand that eternal life is in the love of God. P.317 bottom right. Sec. 2.

Love is so fast that even light cannot follow it. Love is the fastest thing in the world. It is also the brightest and the most perfect. Love is the only thing that fills things up completely. P.318 left top. Sec. 2.

Only when love is involved is life set in motion. The root of life begins in love. The basis for God's continued existence is not life, but love. P.319 top left. Sec.2.

Where is God? We say He is omnipresent. This means He is not in one specific place. He is wherever love is. You need to know this. Based on love, He is omnipresent. We too can be omnipresent when love is our central focus. That is a privilege we can enjoy when we possess love. P.320 right. Sec.3.

It is only possible to form a reciprocal relationship with the universe when you have love. Without love, such reciprocity can never take place. The reason love is said to be gentle and humble is that with those qualities it can be abundantly and fully put in motion without resistance. When something is gentle, humble and sacrificial, it can relate with anyone. It can go anywhere without resistance. In essence then, this is not really sacrifice. The key to working without resistance is living for the sake of others, sacrificing for others and serving others. Why must we sacrifice for and serve others? We must do so in order to perfect the respiratory organs for our second life. P.321. left. Sec. 3.

When you are intoxicated in the love of God you would not become bored even if you were to stare at a grain of sand for a thousand years. P.321 right bottom. Sec.3.

Love alone has the power to unite the 5 senses. P.322. right bottom. Sec.3.

Our minds can be infinitely enlarged through heart, rather than through knowledge. A heart of love is so big that it can more than embrace the universe, so once we develop this original and mighty domain, even God will want to come and take naps there. Since we cannot embrace God through our knowledge, we must know how great a heart of love is. P.323. right. Sec.3.

How can you rise to the position of becoming the absolute God's object partner? Can you do it by making effort? By using force? None of these methods will work. However, if you form a bond of love with God, you can immediately ascend to an equal footing with Him. P.324 top left. Sec.4.

The love of God and of human beings are essentially the same. P.324 bottom right. Sec.4.

Love did not exist before God did; love is there because God exists. That is why, for God, life is first and love is second, but for human beings, love is first and life is second. P.325 right top. Sec.4.

A human being is the body of God, who is assuming physical form. Since we are the physical body of God, we are the external God. God wishes to bestow such a privilege on us. P.325 bottom right. Sec.4.

Love is absolute. Even God, who has absolute knowledge, absolute capability and absolute authority, is absolutely obedient in front of absolute love. P.327 right. Sec.4.

The love of God is love for the sake of others, love that seeks to live for others. When there is such a love – true love – things automatically rotate. How did the universe begin? It began from the point of rotation. All existing things, by their intrinsic nature, have to rotate. Then what can keep on rotating forever? The love that is willing to give eternally, that is, eternal love, will keep rotating forever. Since the giving and receiving forces become one and want to give and give, they have no choice but to expand. P.328 right top. Sec.4.

God's love expresses parental love, conjugal love, and children's love. Of course, it includes brotherly love, and when it expands it also contains the love of the nation and world. We say that God's love is parents' love, husband and wife's love, and children's love. P.332 top right. Sec.1.1 Ch.2

For God, Adam is the core of God's self, and the core of the ideal love of the future. So Adam is God's body. On the other hand, Eve is God's wife and body. Adam is a spiritual partner relating to God's body and Eve is a physical partner. So when Adam and Eve become husband and wife and love each other, with whom are they sharing their love? They are in love with God. This is why marriage is exceptionally holy. P.336 bottom left. Sec.1.1 Ch.2

Are arteries greater or veins greater? Which is greater? They are equal. Then, which is greater, God or people? They are equal. When it comes to love, if God is the artery, we human beings are like the veins, so we have the value of having the privilege to be God's equal. "I am my own Lord throughout heaven and earth. I am omniscient, omnipotent, and omnipresent. There is nothing that does not go through me." What makes this happen? Love does. P.339. left top. Sec.1.2. Ch.2

Which comes first, love or life? Love comes first. Just because the universe came out of God's life does not mean that life is highest. It says that love is highest. Although God started creating heaven and earth with life, the starting point and motivation of this life is love. It is because of love that life came into being. P.339. left. Sec.1.2. Ch.2.

When Adam and God become one and their love overflows, Adam can become God. P.339 bottom right. Sec.1.2. Ch.2

The bodies of Adam and Eve who have not fallen are houses wherein God can dwell. Had Adam and Eve become the body of love, body of life, and body of lineage eternally unified through true love, making God the center of their heart, the mind and body would not be fighting today. The Fall means that humankind inherited Satan's life and blood through Satan's love. This is why this lineage must be transformed. The providence of salvation will be completed only when the wild olive tree is transformed into the true olive tree. P.340 right end. Sec.1.2 Ch.2.

Children are the fruit of their mother and father's love and the result of their investment. They are the extension of their mother and father's life and the realization of their mother and father's ideal. Those who have had children and given their love to them will know. This is why they say about their beloved sons, "This is the substance of my love, the extension of my life, and the realization of my ideals – my second self." p.347 first para. Ch.2, Sec.3.1

There is no principle that strikes parents who love their children. They cannot be hit. The universe naturally protects them. You need to know this. A place where loving parents embrace their loving children and rejoice cannot be attacked by the principles of the universe; rather, it receives its natural protection. P.349. lower right. Ch.2 Sec 3.1

There is nothing bad in the heart of parents who live for the sake of their children. The more worn out their clothes, the more miserable their situation, the further they dig into the deep valley of tears. P.350 top left. Ch.2, Sec.3.1

When parents divorce, this is like cutting their children in half with a knife. The public law of the universe does not allow this. Parents who violate this will receive punishment and be followed by misfortune wherever they go, unable to find happiness. P.350 top right. Ch.2, Sec.3.1

Although people may not understand this, parents who have raised many children can see that their heart of love is wide, large, and deep. People who have raised many children can feel on their own that they cannot strike even their wicked enemies. They are standing on that broad a foundation and living according to that broad a law. P.351 Ch.2, Sec.3.2

Each person is not precious just because he has life, but because he has participated together in his parents' love. It is parents who have loved, but it is the individual that is the fruit of their love. Each one is precious because he is born having both the beginning point and the fruit. P.353 top left. Ch2, Sec.3.2

The reason parents are precious is that they give for the sake of their children. So things come to be the other way around: when the parents get old, they become children. Long before, the parents were their children's teachers, but as they become seventy and eighty years old, they become like children. At that time, the child takes the place of the father or mother. The child should love his parents just as they raised him. P.353. last. Ch.2, Sec.3.2

Where does the root of this love lie? It does not lie within oneself. God is the source of love. He is the source of love for humankind. P.354. top left. Ch.2, Sec 4.1

When a man and a woman are joined together in love, they must live together on earth for a hundred years, and even after they die they are to live together eternally. Although they have two bodies, they become one body, and as they rotate together they create oneness. When their two bodies become one, they come to rotate with God and establish a four-position foundation of love. This is nothing less than the ideal world. P.354. right. Ch.2, Sec.4.1

The mother has devoted herself more than anyone else, and has suffered more than anyone else; hence, we can say that she is more loving than anyone else. In this sense, women have an elevated and precious position in the arena of emotions. No matter how much a father loves his baby, he does not know that love to the degree the mother does. For this reason, if anyone goes to heaven, women will go to the heavenly kingdom of heart. From this standpoint, it is not bad to be born as a woman. You will come to see that God is fair. P.371 lower left. Ch.2 Sec.6.1 (two entries)

What do you have to do to be a child of filial piety? You must always align yourself with the direction of your parents' heart. The one who walks the path of filial piety does not do things separately from his parents. When his parents go east, he should also go east, and when they go west, he should also go west. There should be no question about it. Even if you are told to go a certain way and then to turn back ten times, you should again turn back and follow your parents. P.371 lower right. Ch2. Sec.6.2.

When children have grown up in the tradition of love, do you think they could be indifferent if their parents wanted a divorce? Absolutely not. The children would all insist, "I am your child. I am the one in whom you are combined. For me, you have to make whatever negotiation is necessary, and you have to be great parents for me. I need you." We must make young people and parents awaken to the fact, that because of their children, parents have no right to divorce. P.373. last excerpt. Ch.2 Sec.6.2.

What is a patriot? Does being a patriot mean devoting one's effort for the nation's ruler? No. You should know that those who know how to serve the people as they would serve the nation's ruler are patriots. What is a child of filial piety? They are not those who make devoted efforts for their parents. You should know that those who make devoted efforts for their brothers and sisters as they would serve their parents are children of filial piety. What is a saint? They are the people who have sacrificed themselves until now and died for the sake of all humankind. What is a divine son or daughter? Those who reach out to the world centering on God, who serve humankind as they would serve God are divine sons and daughters. The historical saints are those who have died for the sake of the people of the world. And who are the divine sons and daughters of God? They are loyal to God, but as they live for God they also live for the sake of all people. p.376 bottom left. Ch.2 Sec8.1.

No matter how great someone may be, could he ever be greater than God?" and values most highly all things created through God investing His heart, he must surely be a child of God. Such a person does not need to pray; he lives with God and is a person driven by God. P.382. right Ch.2 Sec.9.2.

As you have the responsibility to release the sorrow of the creation that is sighing and lamenting, even with one tree or stem of grass you should deeply experience the heart and care God invested into their creation six thousand biblical years ago. You should have such a heart that you are able to shed tears even at the sight of one stem of grass growing along the road. You should be able to weep while holding onto one tree, crying, "How lonely you must be to have lost your master!" I myself have shed many tears. I have wept profusely while clutching a rock; I have wept to see the wind blow. Now, because you have heard my words, you will understand. P.383 left. Ch.2. Sec. 9.2.

You should know that those who cannot love people or love nature cannot love God. P.384 bottom left. Ch.2 Sec.9.2.

You should have the attitude that you will raise her like your younger sister, love her like your wife, and serve her like your mother. In loving her, you should start by loving her as a younger sister, and only then love her as your wife; in all, you should love her like your younger sister, elder sister, bride, and mother. Only then can we restore God's unfulfilled love, lost through the Fall. P.386 left. Ch.3 Sec. 1.

According to the original view of marriage, you should determine that no matter how ugly your wife may be you will love her more than a beautiful woman. P.386-7 bottoms. Ch.3. Sec 1.

As a man, if he does not know how to love a woman, he cannot love God and humankind. P.387 . Ch.3. Sec 1.

International marriage is the quickest way for the different races of the world to be one. P.388. left top. Ch.3. Sec. 1.

Single people will never be able to go to the heavenly kingdom. For singles, the heavenly kingdom is a land of despair. Although there is at least hope in a land where one is lonely, a land of despair means a state of hopelessness. P.388. bottom left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.

When is the most beautiful time, the time of youth when the flower is in full bloom? It is young adulthood. This period is the seven years from age eighteen to twenty-four. This seven year period is a time never to be repeated in your life, a time when the beautiful flower of your love will blossom. How precious is this beautiful time that will come only once in your

life. You know peonies, don't you? Their buds are wrapped tightly in dozens of layers so they cannot be opened up easily. The same is true for men and women. Then when should you fully reveal the crimson bud of your love that blossoms like a yellow flower? The time when beauty is best revealed within the harmony of heaven and earth is the time of youth. For human beings, it is a time when the blossoms are at their peak. Youth is a time when you shine as the central pinnacle of God's great work of art. It is at this time that you should be in full bloom under God's blessings. P.391 right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.

Whereas a rubber band gets thinner and thinner the more it is stretched, the string of love does the opposite by getting thicker and thicker the more one pulls on it. P.397 bottom right. Ch.4. Sec. 1.

So, eventually the number seven will be realized when above and below, left and right, and front and back all intersect at the one center. To form number seven in this way means to become a family where all become completely one in true love together with God, resulting in a perfect sphere of harmony and unification. P.398. left. Ch.4. Sec.1.

Also, the worst and most hated of all enemies is the one who has destroyed love. There is no devil more atrocious than the devil who makes it impossible for children to love their parents and who destroys a couple's relationship so they cannot love each other as husband and wife. P.401. top right. Ch.4. Sec.2.

What is the heavenly kingdom? You talk about going to paradise or the heavenly kingdom, but you cannot go alone. The Kingdom of Heaven is a place where you must go together with your parents and brothers and sisters. P.402. last. Ch. 4. Sec.2.

In the spirit world, since all kinds of people are gathered together, including murderers and their victims, the victims try to take revenge, fighting with knives against the perpetrators. This is why there are so many barriers blocking the way. Thus, evil spirits sometimes go to their enemies' descendants on earth and cause them to have fatal accidents. Things like this happen, and so these problems must all be resolved. These problems must first be resolved in the earthly world. In resolving them, you on earth have to offer a better solution, a more pleasing offering. These problems will not be resolved unless you give those spirits with resentment something they want which is of more importance to them than someone's death, more important than whatever it was that caused them to have enmity. P.410 left. Ch.5 Sec.1.

#### **BOOK 4 – TRUE FAMILY**

The final age of worldly supremacy is none other than the Last Days. Can a strong elder brother come home and be the boss there? No. No matter how strong the elder brother may be, he cannot be the boss when he comes home. He may be a world champion in the ring, but he cannot be the boss at home. Even when an elder brother has several hundred doctorates, can he come home and be the boss? No, not even then. Why not? Because his parents are there. p.435. top right. Ch.2. Sec.3.

Then in the case of the parents, the more children they have, the more they can learn about their spouses. For example, in the case of the mother, as she sees her sons grow up she could think, "Oh, that is probably how my husband was when he was growing up." So, loving the children is essentially the same as loving the husband the way he was before she met him. Also the husband could think, "Ah, my wife would have been like this daughter! She is showing me how her mother was when she was young," and so he would learn from her. Through loving the children, he fulfills the condition of loving every aspect of his wife. The mother and father do not say, "Let us love only the boys and not the girls." They love their sons and daughters equally, without discrimination. So by having sons and daughters, a beautiful circle of love in the family is formed. The mother and father will treat the children equally. All parents are like this. So hating your brother or sister is a greater sin than hating your mother. P.436. left bottom. Ch. 2. Sec. 4.

Parents need to get permission from the grandfather before sending their grandson anywhere. Parents cannot simply do whatever they want. This is because the grandfather stands in the position of God. P.437. top right. Ch.2. Sec.5.

Definition of Front and Back and Top and Bottom in family relationships. Ch.3.

Loving one (one's) partner during your lifetime is the equivalent to God loving the world. P.445. Ch.3. Sec.5.

What has God been looking for up until now? He has not been seeking a subject partner; rather He has been looking for an ideal object partner. He has been looking for those who resemble God and possess the inner and outer aspects of the world He created. What is the starting point that leads to such a result? It is the family. There is nothing that can represent the universe better than the family. P.445. Ch.3. Sec. 5.

No matter how firmly we have determined to become an absolute being and establish an absolute purpose, this will be useless unless we are happy. Our daily life should be happy. P.451. Ch.4. Sec.2.

What is most precious for a man and woman? It is love. Love is the key element needed to experience happiness. No matter how lofty a person's purpose may be, if he fails to establish a love that can take dominion over his purpose, he will have to pursue a new purpose. Purpose cannot stand above love. P.451. Ch.4. Sec.4.

But if you find a way to know God's love and really taste it, then His love cannot be compared to anything in this world. If there is someone who has tasted this love, no amount of difficulty or sorrow can defeat him. P.454. Ch.4. Sec.4.

Why do a man and a woman long for each other? It is because a man can possess God only through a woman, and a woman can possess God only through a man. In other words, they long for each other because God comes and dwells where a man and a woman have become one in love. P.460 bottom left. Ch.5. Sec.1.



A woman is born to meet a man, and a man is born to meet a woman, are they not? This is the highest truth. Therefore, we should find the realm of blessing that conforms to this principle. Deviating from this highest realm of truth constitutes the highest evil. P.461. left middle. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

A man is born to find a woman, and a woman is born to find a man. A man and a woman are born to become one and come in contact with God's love, which is at a higher level. They cannot come into contact with this love alone. Even if they were to contact it alone, it would be one-sided. They cannot come into contact with three-dimensional and spherical love. This is why a man and woman get married: to jump to a higher level, three-dimensional realm of love. P.469. left bottom. Ch. 6. Sec. 2.

A man should know that the woman standing in front of him is God's daughter and humankind's daughter. If you can love her as a woman who is loved by humankind and love her as God's beloved daughter, you are qualified to be her husband. But otherwise you are not. Women are the opposite. Do not think, "He is my man." Before saying that he is your man, think of him as God's son and a man representing the masculinity of humankind. You will pass if you are a woman who can love him more than humankind does and more than God does.

When you marry, you should think that as a man you will be the right foot and as a woman you will be the left foot, taking steps through the family to live for the sake of humankind and God. P.469-70. Ch.6. Sec. 2.

For a woman, her sexual organ is the holy place of love, and the key to open that gate is held only by her husband. If a husband has two or more keys to a woman's holy place of love, he is Satan. Also, if the wife's holy place could be opened by any key, when it is supposed to be opened only by the key held by her husband, she is also Satan. When the key of love held by the husband opens his wife's holy place and enters there, the most precious sons and daughters in the world will be born. P.485-6. Ch.7. Sec.6.

Parental love does not originate from conjugal love. Unchanging love does not originate from the horizontal conjugal relationship, but is surely related to the origin of a vertical flow. P.492. right. Ch.8. Sec.3.

Husbands should call their wives more than babies call their mothers. Those who do not do that are wretched people. Also, wives should call their husbands even more than that. P.528. top right. Ch.11. Sec.8.

Henceforth, our worship service should proceed not in the format of a sermon, but rather a report. That report should contain something families can be proud of. P.529. last. Ch.11. Sec. 8.

Where is God's most holy place? It was to have been the male and female organs that were untainted by the Fall. This is the place where love was to have dwelt. This is God's holy of holies. P.531. top right. Ch.12. Sec.2.

Eve, the ancestor of humankind, first fell by having an illicit love relationship with the archangel, and then because of this, she also fell physically through her relationship with Adam. Thus, their sinful lineage has been transmitted to their descendants.

You must understand that God can never comfortably dwell in a place where even small traces of Satan persist. For people to receive God's love, they must first die and be born again. In human society, would a man have any reason to like his wife if, after their marriage to each other, she is unable to forget about her first husband? P.531. right middle. Ch.12. Sec. 2.

The color of love in today's American society is, in short, a disgusting color of death. P.532. Left. Ch.12. Sec.2.

If American society continues to behave like this, it will have no hope for the future but instead will be filled only with despair. It is crystal clear that it will eventually be destroyed – not by God's judgment but rather by people who have lost their humanity. P.532. Bottom left. Ch.12. Sec.2.

Up until now, women have been strictly directed to maintain their chastity, but from now on, men should be directed likewise. P.535. left. Ch.12. Sec.5.

There is a saying that goes, "Chastity for woman and purposefulness for man." What this means is that chastity is for the sake of fulfilling God's will concerning love, and purposefulness is for the sake of fulfilling God's purpose. Since it is said that chastity is for women, women should know only one love, and since it is said that purposefulness is for men, men should go forward unwaveringly for the sake of one purpose only. Adam and Eve should have known the right path and should have maintained purposefulness and chastity, yet they did not and they fell. P.535. Right. Ch.12. Sec.5.

In preserving that purity, which is pristine and of great value, you should have the mind and determination that even if you had to live alone for a thousand or ten thousand years, your love would never be misused. P.535. middle left. Ch.12. Sec. 5.

God knows what Satan wants in the Last Days. Through free sex, Satan wants to stop every last person from returning to God. In other words, he wants to destroy all humanity and create hell on earth.... Accordingly, we will find the way to heaven by going in the direction diametrically opposite to that of this hell on earth. When the returning Lord comes to save this world, he will teach this diametrically opposite way and lead us to heaven.

Then what is the way that is diametrically opposite to the way of free sex? Since the false parents created the way of free sex, the True Parents must appear and rectify this. God cannot intervene here. No sovereignty or military, no economic or

political power can do it. Since this trend was caused by the false parents, unless the True Parents come and use their scalpel to operate, there will be no way for humanity to be saved. The one who has sinned must indemnify it.

It was within the first family that a false marriage took place. This event distorted the lineage 180 degrees. Therefore, the True Parents must come and bestow marriage that is in a direction 180 degrees opposite, in order to open the way to heaven. P.537. bottom left. Ch.12. Sec.7.

## **BOOK 5 – EARTHLY LIFE AND THE SPIRIT WORLD**

We fail or succeed by what we do in a single moment, not a lifetime or long period of time. P.549. whole section. Ch.1. Sec.1.4.

Today, although we are exiles from our original homeland and live a fallen life, we are destined to return there. God had to create a path for this in the course of history because we could not do so by our own efforts.

This is why God raised up many different religions. They are training grounds through which He has been directing all people along that path, whatever their race, cultural background, customs and traditions. Religions are the training grounds for training people to become eligible to return to the original homeland. Taking into account the diverse cultural backgrounds ranging across the four corners of the earth, God is leading humanity toward a unified world of religion that can progress upward onto higher ground.

What does religion which guides people to the original homeland, centrally teach? It is to live for the sake of others. P.552. Ch.1. Sec. 1.7.

What is the endpoint of our desires? It is the possession of God's love. If, in that regard, we possess love more precious than our own, God cannot be ours. Thus, we need to possess God's love. If we possessed only God's love, then it would be all right even if He were not present. When His love becomes mine and mine becomes His, the internal and the external become one for the first time. P.553. middle left. Ch.1. Sec. 1.8.

That is why, when you receive the Blessing, you undergo the ceremony for changing the lineage. You must believe in this more than your own life. Just because it is a Unification Church ceremony, you should not think of it as some ordinary ritual. It is like a wonder drug, an antidote, to restore the dead back to life. P.553. right middle. Ch.1. Sec. 1.9.

The spirit world is in a different dimension from this limited earthly world. We cannot move freely within mundane confines, but as the spirit world is a higher-dimensional place, you can do anything there; you can leap across time. If you want something based on love, you can have it all anytime, anywhere. P.554. bottom left. Ch.1. Sec. 1.9.2.

Your inner person and outer person are in conflict. When will this conflict end? After ten years? Or not even by the time you die? If God had created human beings in that way, then He would not be a god with a single purpose but a god with dual purposes. Such a god would be a chaotic god. All the laws of the universe systematically pursue a distinct purpose without being at cross-purposes. From that perspective, we know that we were not originally created in this way. P.558 bottom and top. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

The totality of God and all creation cannot be exchanged for the value of life on earth. Why? Because without humankind existing physically on earth, God and the universe combined together would still be incomplete. P.560 right bottom. Ch.1. Sec.4.2.

It is better to know the truth when you are younger, before age 16 or even in infancy, than in adulthood or older age. P.562. bottom left. Ch.1.Sec.4.5.

The 2<sup>nd</sup> Second Generation or Youth will not leave or fall away if we deeply acquaint them with God and eternal life before the age of 16. p.565. left middle. Ch.1.Sec.5.1.

If you need money, make it. If you need people, work hard to raise them. Never ask anyone for help. Do not rely on the Church for help. You should help them, instead. P.587. Ch.2. Sec.2.7.5.

Religious people who think God is joyful have neither brains nor common sense. P.611. Ch.2. Sec.3.7. bottom.

The time has come to link the spiritual and physical worlds on the global stage. Such unification does not take place quietly, but rather both heaven and earth are shaken. The world tried to stop God from achieving it in a bitter struggle, but He won. It was accomplished at the Washington Monument Rally. Starting from 1976, the satanic world can no longer accuse God. Satan can no longer accuse God directly. He might still accuse our ancestors in the spirit world, but not God. P.612. Ch.3. Sec.1.1

In addition, all the spirits in the spirit world will be mobilized to drive away the satanic forces from the earth. In this way, a foundation is formed for goodness to exceed the works that Satan has done until now. The spirit world will guide people to believe in the Unification Church. Jesus, other great religious leaders, and their own ancestors will appear to them and push them by spiritually chastising and punishing them if they do not. P.612. Ch.3. Sec.1.1

Until now East and West have had different spirit worlds. How was it possible to unite them? Through love. I brought together people from East and West into races and tribes centered on God's love through the joint weddings of the Unification Church. P.612. Ch.3. Sec.1.1.

I may appear to be unaware of everything because I do not explain everything, but in fact I know everything. P.613. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

The fallen mind has no relationship to God. He has left it. God Himself can neither relate to our mind nor control it directly. P.623. right. Ch.3. Sec.2.1.1.

In the spirit world, anything can be known instantly. When meeting people, even without an introduction, you will know their names, whether they lived eons, or million, or billions of years ago. It is such a speedy world. p.628. bottom left. Ch3.Sec.3.2.

Biblical history actually spans millions and tens of millions of years. P.629. top left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

So far, the center of the hierarchy of the spirit world has been occupied by the Buddhist, Confucian, and Muslim groups. P.629. bottom right. Ch.3.Sec.3.4.

Your physical father is the father who became the bridge. You will call him brother in the spirit world. You will not be calling your physical mother mom either. P634. top left. Ch.3.Sec.3.7.

Grandmothers and grandfathers will look much more attractive (beautiful) than you in the spirit world. P.635. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.7.

Only art will remain. People who cannot write love poems are failures. P.636. left center Ch.3. Sec.3.8.2.

In this regard, we are coming to the stage in which the spirit world will be officially and automatically recognized. P.636. left lower Ch.3. Sec.3.8.2.

Discover something new every day. Such people are never discouraged by difficulties. P.641. top left. Ch.3. Sec.4.3.

How the Kingdom CIG will function as a peace keeper like the UN. If a member is victimized in some secluded place, it will become a problem for Heaven and for the U.C. and it will be discussed whether compensation will be claimed for damages. P.641. right. Ch.3. Sec. 4.4.

How traditional religions have connected with spirit world through harmonizing with their rhythms and dancing motions. But, we are now the transmitting station. P.642. top left. Ch.3. Sec. 4.4.

When you go to spirit world, you must report your bad things, or faults, or mistakes, first. Then your good thing, or successes or accomplishments. P.642. left. Ch.3. Sec.4.4.

UC members will initially go to hell, and then a lawyer will plead their case to pull them out. P.642. bottom left. Ch.3. Sec.4.4.

Even if people attend church for 100 years, if they still have a self-centered mind, they will never get to heaven. P.645. right. Ch.4.Sec.1.2.

Martyrs who died in order to go to heaven will not get there. Only those who died out of love for God and gratitude for his love and grace to them. P.645. bottom right. Ch.4. Sec.1.2.

Regret and anguish has not been because nobody believed in God or knew Him, but rather that there was nobody who could attend or relate to God in heart. P.649 right. Ch.4. Sec.1.4.

The first consideration or purpose of religion is not to create God's Kingdom but to prepare a nation that can inherit the Kingdom. P.649. bottom right. Ch.4.Sec.1.4.

To establish the heavenly nation, first its children need to emerge, then one man and one woman must emerge, then one family, then citizens. P.650. left. Ch.4.Sec.1.4.

If you never even once stood in a serious position or never had even one serious moment, you will be ashamed of yourselves before God. P.652. left top. Ch.4.Sec.1.5.

If your life consists of goodness not exceeding 60%, you will be headed for hell. P.652. left center. Ch.4.Sec.1.5.

God did not make hell. P.652. top right. Ch.4. Sec. 1.5.

Genuine love exerts its influence on the enemy. If this love goes to the enemy once, twice, three and four times, the enemy will disappear for sure. Therefore Jesus said Love your enemy. P.653. right. Ch.4.Sec.1.5.

When God sees humankind dying in hell, He becomes desperate in an ongoing effort to save them. Only then will His responsibility as the Parent of heaven be fulfilled. If He says, "Ugh! Let's just get rid of them all," He cannot stand in the parent's position. Therefore, this establishes the logic that God has to liberate even hell. P.654. left. Ch.4.Sec.1.5.

The Unification Church is not just a casual place. If you draw a line here, that line will stay drawn forever. If this door is closed, nobody can open it again for eternity. If it is opened, nobody can ever close it again. What is bound on earth is bound in heaven. P.655. left. Ch.4. Sec. 1.5.

Suppose there is a dying person who says, "God, though I did not live according to Your will until now, in my mind I tried to go to heaven. So please regard me as having established the proper indemnity conditions!" Because God is fair, He will put that person in a position of those trying to go to heaven. In what position will God place him? Since the person was trying to go to heaven, God will put him in such a position. God rewards him according to his actions. P.655. left bottom. Ch.4. Sec. 1.6.

Very good explanation of the Kingdom of Heaven and how to create it. P.656-660. Ch.4. Sec.1.7 2.3.

When the second advent comes, a new realm should be created; not in heaven but at the bottom of paradise and in hell. P.657. left. Ch.4. Sec.1.7.

The path to heaven does not appear in a self-centered position. Only when you denounce the self will the path that can open up to heaven be opened. P.657 bottom right. Ch.4. Sec.1.8.

Heaven is the place we go after subjugating Satan. It is not where we go by overcoming ourselves, or just the self. P.658. left. Ch.4. Sec.1.8.

The kingdom cannot be realized through just submissively going along by faith. It can never be realized by having only a believing heart. We must overcome Satan. The kingdom does not come through our believing in God, but through our loving Him. P.658. right. Ch.4. Sec. 1.8.

Although the kingdom of heaven might exist in your mind and although God may have felt joy from you, but that would not mean that the Kingdom has been established on earth. God does not desire the individual kingdom of heaven on earth. It is not established by seeing one person's joy. God sacrificed the one person over which He could feel joy, Jesus. P.659. left. Ch.4. Sec.1.8.

Because truth, life and love are like one family, love and life should follow truth, life and truth should follow love, and love and truth should follow life. After the Fall, people failed to form a triangle that holds love, life and truth in equilibrium. P.659-60. Ch.4. Sec.2.1.

Jesus said the Kingdom of Heaven is within you (your heart and mind). Then what kind of mind and heart was he referring to? Good explanation. P.660-61. Ch.4. Sec.2.1.

No one has ever or will ever go to heaven without sacrificing their lives. P.662. left. Ch.4. Sec.2.2.

It is necessary that we understand and dissolve God's sorrow and His sorrowful heart. Not run away from it like most people would do. P.662. right top. Ch.4. Sec. 2.3.

Those who are on the way of truth should walk the path of death until the day they die.

We need to go that way during our lifetime in order to indemnify the suffering, which would normally have to be paid after death. Through suffering on earth we can reduce the period of atonement necessary after death, and that period can be measured in eons. We are walking the way of truth on earth to indemnify the suffering course that otherwise would be walked for eternity. P.665. left. Ch.4. Sec. 3.1.1.

It is your siblings who lead you to the highest, quickest and best way to heaven, not God or me. P.666. right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.1.2.

You cannot go to heaven just by believing in the Unification Church. You must bring actual results. P.667. bottom and top. Ch.4. Sec. 3.1.3.

A gap between God and humankind was created such that no amount of human effort would allow the return to God. Similarly, no matter how much God tried to come to humankind, He could not. A wall and boundary were created and neither God nor humanity was able to surmount that wall. Humanity was not able to attend God as their parent.

This wall came in and remained between the individual's mind and body, and between husband and wife.

Such walls also arose in the family, tribe, people, nation, world, and between heaven and hell in the spirit world. Although God is on His glorious throne in heaven, we on earth cannot surmount the walls surrounding us without removing them. P.668 right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.2.1.

It is the place of absolute self-denial, without which absolute faith cannot emerge. P.669 right top. Ch.4. Sec. 3.2.2.

Those who lend money and remember doing so by adding interest cannot become owners in the Kingdom of Heaven. We must forget about the money we lend. P.671 right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.2.4.

From where does the Kingdom of Heaven start? It starts from the point where you deny even the basic desires of the heart with which you were born. For this reason those who go the way of truth lead celibate lives. But there are difficult problems leading a celibate life. These problems must be faced individually until the returning Lord comes to solve them.

Because there is no way forward giving primary consideration to individual salvation, we must save the family in order to save humankind. The returning Lord is coming to earth again to open the way for redemption of entire families. P.673. bottom left. Ch.4. Sec.3.3.1.

For Jesus, being crucified was nothing. If he had collapsed, he could not face God. If he were to stand as a failure in the ideal of the Kingdom of Heaven and the ideal society, if it existed, he would have wanted to go and seek a wrapping cloth with which he could cover his face and hide. P.674. right. Ch.4. Sec.3.3.1.

Fallen people must go through the providence of restoration, resurrection and re-creation to enter Heaven. P.674 right. Ch.4.Sec. 3.3.1.

God's providence of restoration history of six millennia went through the eras of the first Adam, the second Adam and the third Adam, in the family. So you must have three sons and find spouses for each of them. Thus, you can enter as a family. P.675 left. Ch.4.Sec.3.3.1.

You must overcome hell not by prayer, but by God's love. Otherwise, you cannot enter heaven. This is why I paved the way from earth to heaven by opening the gates of hell on earth and in the spirit world, centered on God's love. The name of the International Peace Highway came from this. P.677. top right. Ch.4. Sec.4.2.1.

All the walls on earth and in the spirit world must be removed, and a way to connect this to hell must be paved. Otherwise, the gates of heaven cannot be opened. P.677. right. Ch.4. Sec. 4.2.1.

After being separated from me because of Danbury, Mother was able to realize the precious value of the True Father and understood how lonely it could be for a woman without her husband. As a result, on February 1, we conducted a ceremony to open the gates of heaven and hell. Now they cannot be closed. Through the True Parents standing at opposite poles, a solution can emerge from the place where the two poles connect. This was to connect the spiritual and physical worlds. On February 1, 1985 at 3 a.m. Eastern Standard Time, this standard was established at Danbury and East Garden. P.678. left. Ch.4. Sec. 4.2.2.

Since we opened the gates of heaven and hell, The role of good spirits as the Savior in the spirit world has begun. The mission of the Savior lay not in the spirit world, but has been limited to the earth, yet now, by paving this way, the good spirits in the other world can educate the evil spirits in hell. P.678. right bottom. Ch.4. Sec. 4.2.2.

True Parents must emerge to open the gates of Heaven for humankind, who started from false parents. Even God cannot open the gates of heaven by Himself. If He could, being omnipotent, why didn't He? The Fall was due to human beings. P.679. left top. Ch.4. Sec. 4.2.3.

If we want to go to heaven, we must pass through and conquer hell. The conquerors of hell go to heaven. P.679. right bottom. Ch.4. Sec. 4.2.3.

You should be joyful. You should go joyfully even when shedding tears. You are to go laughing while shedding tears. P.681. right. Ch.4. Sec.4.4.

The physical and spirit worlds move facing each other. If the physical world ascends, so will the spirit world. If the physical world descends, the spirit world follows suit. If one turns, the other does likewise. The spiritual and physical worlds are not separate. If you do not clearly distinguish between heaven and hell, you will not understand this. P.682. right. Ch.4. Sec.5.2.

From his death until now, Jesus has been working to restore the archangel. P.684. left. Ch.5. Sec.1.

Jesus could not fulfill his mission as the legitimate Son. He went the way of the archangel, the way of the servant and the way of the adopted son. Consequently, even those who believe in Jesus Christ can only become adopted children. They are in the same position as Cain who is of a different lineage. A relationship that is not linked by blood remains in the archangel's position. P.684. left. Ch.5. Sec.1.

Jesus did not die on the cross as the son. If he had been in the position of the son having spirit and body unity, becoming a victorious offering to God, there would be no need for him to come again. He could not offer his total self. He could offer only half of himself. He lost his body and could offer only his spirit. This represents a level equivalent to the angelic realm in the spirit world.

Therefore, Christians cannot enter Heaven but go instead to a spiritual realm lower than paradise and wait there. That spiritual realm is under the dominion of the archangel. P.684. bottom and top. Ch.5. Sec. 1.

It was unjust enough that Jesus died on the cross on earth, but after his death he had to descend to hell for three days. That was a test. Death holds the greatest dread for humankind, but going to hell held the greatest dread for Jesus. Then did he become the master of dread or the master of happiness in hell? He went to hell and for three days had to undergo the ordeal of overcoming suffering. P.685. left. Ch.5. Sec. 1.

The returning Lord must come as the ancestor of not only the third but also the first and second Israels. Unification Church members must, from a position similar to that of the first Israel at the time of Jesus, overcome their doubt. The returning Lord must establish order in the spirit world. By doing this, he must begin his work on the foundation where the first Israel was established. Since people in the spirit world cannot form a bond with the True Parents, they must go through this course. P.685-6. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

The archetypes of the twelve tribes already exist in the spirit world, but Christianity, which had to become the second Israel, lost the center by which it could organize itself into tribes. Thus, the returning Lord must proclaim the ideology of unification and organize his tribes. P.686. top. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

Since God is formless, you will not see Him even when you go to the spirit world. That being so, God, as the Father, must acquire a body. In that way, the incorporeal and corporeal become one. God created Adam and Eve for the purpose of assuming a body, but this is possible only through love. There must be love in order for God to have a body that resembles His image. P.686. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

When Adam and Eve become God's body He will dwell in their minds and rule the physical and incorporeal worlds through them. P.686. left bottom. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

The True Parents are needed not just in this earthly world but also in the spirit world. A palace was supposed to be built in the spirit world by people who lived on earth with love, but there were no such people. Even God and the people in the spirit world cannot build the palace of love. The True Parents must build it. The palace of love in the spirit world begins from the True Parents. Even if there were already a palace in the spirit world, the entire spirit world could only settle with that place at the center if the True Parents entered and declared: This is where we will have a palace. The spirit world absolutely needs me because this responsibility has yet to be fulfilled. P.688. right. Ch.5. Sec. 3.3.

I know the spirit world well. I know all the saints and all the founders of religions who are in any way significant. They do not want to yield to you, but you must not be shut out from that group. p.692. right bottom. Ch.5. Sec. 3.4.

It is a principle that a perfect minus automatically gives rise to a perfect plus, and that a perfect plus automatically creates a perfect minus. That is a principle of the creation of the universe and a law of existence. P.692-3. Ch.5. Sec.4.1.

Even God would like to see my endorsement before giving His approval. He will look to see if my signature is there, and if it is, He will say, Okay, and if not, He will say, No. If I actually have such a patent, then the conclusion is that, in the future, the entire spirit world will move within my hands, and the physical world's path will narrow until they have no choice but to follow. P.694. Ch.5. Sec. 4.2.

There are countless people in the spirit world. Compared to that, the population of the earth is so small. Once we surmount the national level, we will be able to mobilize the spirit world. The people of the world are not a problem. P.695. Ch.5. Sec.4.3.

In the next world, murderers, victims and all sorts of people are gathered. There are people brandishing knives and seeking revenge. So, there are times when evil spirits go to the descendants of their enemies and cause sudden death by an accident in order to bring them to the spirit world. These things must all be resolved. For that to happen, they must first be resolved on earth. To do that, something better must be offered. It can not be done without offering something that is better than the death of an enemy, something that is better than that which gave rise to their resentment. P.695-6. Ch.5. Sec. 4.3.

What we believe in is far from fact and what we know conforms to fact. P.697. Ch.5. Sec. 4.3.

My accomplishments thus far exceed those of anyone in the spirit world. P.697. Ch.5. Sec. 4.4.

He (Heung Jin Nim) attained the state of being the son who went to heaven with the qualification of having perfected himself for the first time since the Fall. P.699. left top. Ch.5. Sec. 5.1.

Jesus had to go to the other world and return because, within the realm of True Parent's heart, separation from Satan could not be done within the realm of dominion based on accomplishments through the Principle; and because the foundation of love was not established within the realm of direct dominion. P.699. bottom right. Ch.5. Sec. 5.1.

From the viewpoint of generations, vertically the parents are above and Heung-jin of the second generation is below. Yet in the spirit world this is reversed. In terms of our birth on earth, I am in the position of the elder brother and Heung-jin in that of the younger brother. I am in Cain's position and Heung-jin in Abel's position. In the spirit world, Heung-jin becomes the eldest son. He is in the position of the elder brother and all the other spirits are in the position of younger siblings. Based on the realm of heart, that is how it is. From God's standpoint, He is the Father, I am the elder son and Heung-jin is the younger son. P.699-700 C.5. Sec. 5.1.

Heung-jin can let the realm of the second son inherit the blessings of the right of the first son. Satan tried to prevent this from happening by plundering the inheritance. P.700. Top. Ch.5. Sec. 5.1.

For the spirit world, the day it received Heung-jin was the most joyful day in history. He opened the gates of the spirit world as the messiah of love and opened the way of an exemplary martyr on earth. That is why Unification Church members should love him. P.700-1. Ch.5. Sec. 5.2.

I believe Heung-jin will establish the realm of resurrection of love in the physical and spirit worlds. Through his death, love will be resurrected. Holding on to the spiritual and physical worlds, I will proclaim the realm of the resurrection of love. With that done, we will bid goodbye to the realm of death. For that reason, you should not be sad even at funerals. P.701. left. Ch.5. Sec. 5.2.

You must know that since he (Heung Jin Nim) was born as a Korean, he will appear as the fruit of good Korean kings. P.701. right. Ch.5. Sec. 5.3.

Thus, as Heung-jin's position as king and the Korean Abel king's position becoming one, a Korean-centered sovereignty forms. When that becomes one, he stands in the position of the Abel king.

After that, all kings will stand in the realm of Abel. You do not know this since you are on earth, but in the spirit world, unity is achieved instantly. Thus, with all kings centering on Korea, 120 nations can be completely united. Since those who can become Abel before that king those who believed in Judaism or Christianity and died, all established those kingships in preparation to serve the Messiah, and all Abel peoples within the sphere of religion who in turn revere him will become completely united. P.702. left. Ch.5. Sec. 5.3.

If there is just one nation among 120 nations that can serve the True Parents anywhere, the gates of the Kingdom of Heaven will be opened from there. P.702. right bottom. Ch.5. Sec. 5.3.

You all are the historically resurrected bodies of your ancestors, wearing their faces. P.703. top. Ch.6. Sec. 1.

God knows that the way of the Principle cannot be walked without loving one's enemies. Would God let humanity perish in the judgment of the Last Days? No. He is the Parent of humankind. The so-called judgment by fire spoken of in Christianity today is not a literal one. P.706. top. Ch.6. Sec. 2.1.

We must undergo the three great processes of judgment. First, the word of the Principle will judge you and after that, you will be subjected to the judgment of substance. Who will judge? Those who substantiated the word by working hard in fundraising and witnessing, and who followed all the rules, they will judge you. Those who worked hard will judge you; that is judgment. If you do not follow the Word, even Satan will judge you and others will accuse you. I will judge Unification Church members; the Unification Church leaders will judge them, and those who followed the will of the Unification Church will judge them. P.706. left bottom. Ch.6. Sec. 2.1.

Doing something unwillingly is like not doing it at all. If you do it thinking of God and Father, their essence will be embedded inside your shell, like a fully mature chestnut embedded inside the burr. When you think of God and me dwelling in your heart, my words and God's Word will become your core. P.706. right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.1.

Scholars or presidents are no exception. The way of indemnity is one that must be sought, not taught. You must seek it yourselves. Those who do not do this will go to hell. You must understand that the chains of hell are hooked all over your eyes, your nose, and your thoughts. This is not a threat; it is simply that indemnity is needed to reverse the Fall. P.707. right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

As long as hooks remain within you, Satan will claim you as his. P.707. right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

How can you go up there? (to heaven) In order to pass through to that place, you need a certificate. Without it, you cannot pass through. Can you go there saying, "I'm going to bring my doctorate in literature." In the spirit world, it has even less value than toilet paper. P.708. top. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

To enter heaven, you need to obtain a certificate from Satan. P.708. left. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

Since the Fall took place, not in God's presence, but with Satan as subject, we must subjugate Satan in order to free ourselves from its realm. P.708. right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

Jesus, too, was victorious in overcoming the three great temptations. We cannot go to heaven without obtaining Satan's signature that we were historically victorious. No matter what, we must obtain Satan's signature. When Jesus overcame Satan's three great temptations, Satan acknowledged tearfully, "You are eternally different from me." P.708. right bottom. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

Satan is like the prosecutor, God the judge, and Jesus is the attorney. If Satan ensnares a person saying, "You did this and this, did you not?" and says to God, "This person should be dealt with in this way," God's hands are tied. But Jesus, in the position of an attorney would say, "Heavenly Father, this person's ancestors did such and such things and he is from a good lineage. Since he is accused on these counts, he should be given an indemnity condition related to his crimes so he can be freed from accusation." This is what has been happening. P.709. left top. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

Without getting a certificate that we loved Satan, we can never go to heaven. That is what the Unification Church is doing. Normally we treat those who oppose us as enemies. Instead, we should love them, even though it is stifling. We must love our enemies and pray for them to have good fortune. We have no choice. Unless Cain and Abel become one, there will be no restoration, and you cannot return to your Parent. P.709. left. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

What does the Unification Church teach? It teaches the way to obtain Satan's approval. You must not only get a spiritual approval, but also a substantial one that combines both the spirit and the flesh. P.709. right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

You cannot go to heaven simply because you have a clean and pure heart. P.710. top. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

When Unification Church members go to the spirit world, you will be questioned at the gates on the conditions I have taught you to fulfill. Everything I have taught up to the present time will be written down as conditions. If you cannot answer to them, you will not be able to get in. You will have to wait in the middle realm of the spirit world for me to

come. You may wish for my prompt arrival but even when I do go to spirit world, not all of you can enter the realm where I will go. P.711. left. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

As such, Jesus would say, "This person performed good deeds believing in my name. Heavenly Father, is it not true, based on an agreement made between You and the devil, that the devil cannot take someone who strove to be good, someone who observed the public laws? Is that not true?" Then God would say, "Yes, it is true." P.711. right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

The devil cannot take people who are placed in a position of goodness in Jesus' name, which is why people are told to believe in Him. But can you go to heaven just by unconditionally believing in him? P.711. right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

I went to the spirit world and saw many scenes in which famous ministers were kneeling down in hell, saying, "I did not realize that Rev. Moon was such a person!" P.711. right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

We must have a nation. You have your own nations, but the nation to which we are going is a different one. Without receiving the officially recognized citizenship of this new nation, one cannot enter heaven. However much he may want to, Satan cannot accuse people with a certified citizenship. He cannot accuse them from any direction whether north, south, east, or west, or any era past, present, or future. P.711. bottom right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.2.

Women who are born beautiful are inclined to pursue the external. Homely women will inevitably pursue not the external, but rather the internal. The more people pursue the external, the more trapped they become in Satan's ragged playground; but if they pursue the internal they will come closer to God's side. Those who know how to pursue the internal can freely go toward the external, but those who pursue the external can never come toward the internal. P.712. top left. Ch.6. Sec. 3.1

God can freely visit hell. He does not go through any procedures in order to do that. He does not go through procedures to get to His palace in heaven, either. He goes wherever He wants. P.712. right. Ch.6. Sec. 3.1.

What gift will you carry when you go to God in the spirit world? Not money, nor the prestige of an academic title, nor the love for a spouse, nor a happy life. Such things cannot be gifts. You must take your love for God and your love for the world with you to that place. P.712. right. Ch.6. Sec.3.2.

Some people go out to witness, and boast of having evidence of this, but is boasting true evidence? What are you going to do with such evidence? It has nothing to do with you if no one remains from your witnessing efforts. P.713. left. Ch.6. Sec. 3.2.

Whether you become true parents, true teachers, or true lords, if you stand in at least one of those positions, your registration in the Kingdom of Heaven will not be a problem. P.715. top left. Ch.6. Sec.3.3.

Thus, from then and there you register and enter your proper position. This is the course of restoration. Once that connection is made and you are registered, however many mistakes you make or however many misdeeds you commit, you can no longer be governed by the laws established in the satanic world. Therefore, once you transcend the laws of the satanic world, they no longer apply to you no matter what. In the end, earthly laws will not affect you either, since they do not apply to you. P.715. left bottom and top right. Ch.6. Sec.3.4.

If you have not completed a seven-day fast for God, you cannot be registered in that world. Why? Since God has been toiling in the course of the 6,000-year history of restoration, you must fast while contemplating God's efforts. Hence, the Unification Church has the tradition of the seven-day fast. It is not to make you suffer, but to let you set the condition of having struck your body before heaven. P.716. top right. Ch.6. Sec. 3.4.

If you are one with God, you must love Cain. P.717 Ch.6. Sec.3.5.

The commandment of God's Kingdom in heaven is to love the Lord your God with all your heart, soul, and mind. However, the first commandment of His kingdom on earth is to love our nation and race with all our heart, soul, and mind. P.717. middle right. Ch.6. Sec. 3.5.

The era of individual salvation will pass. If the president of a nation is sworn in after joining the Unification Church, his people will also become the citizens of Heaven. Then, by participating in a ceremony officiated by the church, his people will escape from the satanic realm. P.718. bottom left. Ch.6. Sec. 3.5.

Then, what you will need to do is record all your personal history since joining the Unification Church. If you record this incorrectly, you will be stuck in the next world. When you reveal all the details of your personal history and go over them, none of it should stop you. Only after you leave behind a record of achievement, one in which no fault can be found, will you finally enter the age of registration. P.718. bottom right. Ch.6. Sec. 3.5.

Good and evil spirits are fighting each other even in the spirit world. There's a battle going on in that world too. Good spirits battle continually to lead evil spirits to good places, and evil spirits are doing everything they can to prevent good spirits from going to good places. P.720. left. Ch.7. Sec. 1.1.

There are hundreds of billions of spirits in the spirit world. Japan's population of one hundred million is nothing by comparison. It is no more than a speck of dust under one's foot. Billions of spirits are on the attack to take hold over the physical world. Neurosis is one resultant phenomenon of this reality. P.720. right. Ch.7. Sec. 1.2.



The spirit world resembles the mind, but it is the place where the content of the mind is made substantial. It is a place transcending time and space. P.721 left Ch.7. Sec.1.3.

All people in the spirit world are like that, too. They hope for things to get better than they are at the present. They want their lot in spirit world to improve compared to their lot in earthly life. P.723. left. Ch.7. Sec. 1.4.

If you take first place and go to the spirit world, and then connect with the pulley and reel in the rope completely, both the spiritual and physical worlds will be restored. P.723. right. Ch.7. Sec. 1.4.

Since God could not establish the base for a reciprocal relationship with Eve, who was to bring to fruition the essential characteristics of an original mother, He was unable to wear spirit and body with the original characteristics of a subject partner, so He packed things up again.

Then at the time of Jesus, God sent these characteristics to Jesus' object. Thus, they still have no body. Jesus had a body, but the Holy Spirit did not. This is why we say that the Holy Spirit is like fire, oil, or wind.

Nevertheless, if she carries out her motherly mission, enters our hearts, moves them, and cleanses them of sin, we become clean. It is like a mother giving birth to and raising her child. Just like receiving a father's protection, for rebirth one should have the condition of being reborn under Jesus' protection. Then one can say that rebirth is carried out. P.724. left. Ch.7. Sec. 1.5.

In order to unify the spirit world, I drove the Unification Church members on earth into the jaws of death and mercilessly pushed them. When that happens, the spirit world cannot but help you. P.725. right. Ch. 7. Sec. 1.6.

Just like on earth, the spirit realm also has families, tribes, nations and a world. P.728 left top. Ch.7. Sec. 2.2.

In this regard, is there anything particularly different about the people in the spirit world compared to people living on the earth today? Would they suddenly become different? That is not possible. You are harvested with the exact same form in which you lived in this world. All the people in the spirit world are, after all, just people who have lived on earth. From that perspective, the spirit world is no different from the world that people live in today. P.728 left bottom. Ch.7. Sec. 2.2.

This becomes the royal domain for eternally serving the traditional blood relatives in the realm of tribal messiahs who are succeeding in the genealogical generations by serving the heavenly Parent, the heavenly kingdom and the heavenly ancestors. It will be a nation where we can attend the king and sing praises for the eternal reign of peace. Do you understand? You, your mother, father, family and tribe can go directly to heaven only after having lived in such a nation. P.734. left. Sec. Ch.7. 3.

If you live for the sake of your family and take care of your grandparents just three times, they will realize that they were in the wrong.

How many times, through miracles and mighty works, did Moses try to serve in Egypt? Several times seven, ten, even more than twelve times he tried to serve. When you try to serve and yet they do not receive you, then God will guide you. What you have officially invested in one place through serving others, He will bring to fruition in other places. P.734. right. Ch.7. Sec 3.4.

When you are dying, if you say to me, "Oh Teacher, please help me, as I am dying and going to the spirit world," nothing can be done by then. Preparations cannot be made then, but only while on earth. P.734-5. Ch.7. Sec.4.1.

Since the spirit world knows God's heart (of sorrow), if such people on earth appeal to them, spirit people will be mobilized to help with the work on earth of actualizing the ideal of the heavenly kingdom. Spirit people cannot come to earth because it has become a realm of complaint. P.739. bottom left. Ch.7. Sec. 5.1.

Those who die thinking that their death will bring them to heaven cannot go there. The attitude of people who die like that is like that of someone who became insane and committed suicide for heaven. P.740. top left. Ch.7. Sec.5.1.

Christianity caused much trouble by teaching such ideas. Unification Thought has to get rid of these problems. Even if we do not destroy it, it is destined to perish. Yet why must we destroy it quickly? Because if it perishes on its own, it will be abandoned by God. So we must destroy it and redeem it. P.740. middle left. Ch.7. Sec.5.1.

You must witness even when it does not go well. It is like throwing stones into the sea. You keep on doing it and do not stop until the stones fill the sea and form a mountain. Through this, your heart grows. Even if your body remains unchanging, your heart grows. P.740. bottom right. Ch.7. Sec.5.2.

When the force of sympathy enters you, enabling you to shed tears based on God's heart, the entire spirit world will be mobilized. P.741. top left. Ch.7. Sec. 5.2.

Inspire Him (God) to be grateful to you and able to shed tears, saying that although you are the descendants of fallen Adam and Eve, you are better than them. Otherwise you cannot communicate with the spirit world. Only when God is moved to tears and says, "As the descendants of fallen Adam and Eve, and as the descendants of traitors, how can you be like this!" Only then will the spirit world come to your assistance. The spirit world opens from there. Anything below that standard will never work. This is the Principle. P.741. left. Ch.7. Sec. 5.2.

When your character has a certain shortcoming, then listen to the kind of testimony that can supplement it. Listen to those testimonies and absorb them to enhance your character. That is why you must listen to many testimonies about other people's personal experiences. When you listen, do not criticize them. P.742. right. Ch.7. Sec. 5.2.

Criticizing means deciding between Satan's side and God's side. When you criticize, you end up on one of two sides: Satan's or God's. Therefore, criticizing can be a cancer in your development. P.742. right. Ch.7. Sec. 5.2.

What would the people in the spirit world think? Would they not want to bring me something to eat and see me eat it? They are more enthusiastic than you are. It is true. You do not know, but they know everything. They know everything that will happen in the future. P.744. left. Ch.7. Sec.5.4.

Just as the good ancestors were able to enter the life-spirit level from the form-spirit level when Jesus came upon the earth, your ancestors, too, have entered the realm which gives them the special privilege to return to earth through the conditions you have made. P.744. bottom left. Ch.7. Sec. 5.5.1.

Consequently, in the era of the second son after the restoration of the birthright of the firstborn, heavenly law cannot condone the devil's sphere of activities.

Up until now, all the spirits in the spirit world have abused Abel on earth. Just as the first son murdered and sacrificed the second son, since we have the birthright of the firstborn here, from now on we can even regulate the spirit world.

Now they must help us in order to receive blessings. The more they oppose us, the deeper into the pit they will fall. Heavenly fortune is changing rapidly. In the future, they will clamor to have a picture of me hanging in each of their houses. From the spirit world your ancestors will admonish you. Accordingly, those who hang up our flag and my picture and bow to it daily will enliven the work of resurrecting their ancestors.

I do not need to say these things because it sounds like I am telling you to obey me absolutely. I do not like saying such things, but there is no other way.

Until now, numerous sundry low-level spiritualists told you not to go to the Unification Church. Yet from now on, if Buddha, Jesus, and Confucius do not encourage people to go to the Unification Church, they will be violating heavenly law. P.745. Ch.7. Sec. 5.5.1.

This way, it looks as if Paul's spirit appeared in B and again in C around the world.

Looking only at such a phenomenon, people call it reincarnation. It appears like it is this phenomenon of reincarnation. P.746. right bottom. Ch.7. Sec. 5.5.2.

It is difficult enough to find this principle itself, but you must practice it in your own life and achieve victory. If you fail in this, I will not teach it to you.

In other words, instead of just learning about Noah's family, Abraham's family, Jacob's family, the age of Moses, John the Baptist, and the age of Jesus and stopping there, it involves understanding about them all, paying indemnity for them, and equipped yourself with the restored foundation of victory. P.747. Ch.7. Sec.5.5.2.

As he (the Messiah) knows the way to pay indemnity, when people unite with him, even though they have not yet paid indemnity, their indemnity period will be shortened. If a nation takes its place with him, all individuals of the nation will be included here. If a nation pays indemnity, its families, tribes, people, and the nation itself will ascend to the global level. Looking at it this way, think how quickly the world would be restored if one nation were recovered!

Only by establishing a nation can we transcend paradise. P.748. top right. Ch.7. Sec.5.5.2.

When ascending in seeking that nation, however much indemnity you may have paid, you would lose everything if you were to collapse. Wherever you might have climbed up to from the bottom, if you were to collapse, everything would disappear. This has happened repeatedly. But when this is being done on a horizontal level, what you have worked for will remain eternally. In other words, in the age of ascending through restoration, you lose what you invested through indemnity, but when a nation is found and we work horizontally, it will be the age in which your efforts will remain as your accomplishments, rather than disappearing as indemnity. P.749. right. Ch.7. Sec.5.5.2.

## **BOOK 6 – OUR LIFE AND THE SPIRITUAL REALM**

In other words, we were born in spite of our wishes. We live notwithstanding our wishes, and we die notwithstanding our wishes. Then what is there to be proud of? We have no control over our birth; we are merely custodians in this life, and we cannot avoid the path of death. Thus, any attempt to take pride in ourselves is pitiable. P.757. top right Ch.1. Sec. 1.1.

Our heart knows that our lifetime is too short to allow us to restore all the realms of goodness that entangled in history. Even a billion years would still not be enough. P.758. right Ch.1.Sec.1.1.

A building that is built without reference to the original blueprint cannot be what the designer originally intended. P.758. bottom right Ch.1.Sec.1.1.

The source of our life does not come from us. Thus, the purpose of life certainly does not belong to us alone. P.759. top left. Ch.1.Sec.1.2.

Where, then, are people going? They are going to heaven. How about angels? They are also going to heaven. P.760. top left. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.

Now, dogs and all creation can follow their masters to heaven or anywhere else that their masters may go. P.760. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.

The age will come when the family will be seriously re-examined. It will be the age of the re-examination of the Unification Church. The church will no longer be needed. It will be the original age where we can live in attendance to God. P.761 top left. Ch.1.Sec.1.2.

The time is coming when satellites will connect us with the spiritual realm. P.761. bottom right. Ch.1. Sec. 1.2.

You breathe love in the spirit world. Thus, you should live with love as the center of your life on earth in order to freely breathe in the spirit world. If you do not live centered on love during your physical life, you will be unable to breathe freely in the spirit world. The spirit world is a world where you breathe love. You can think of it as a world in which love is the air. P.763. bottom left Ch.1.Sec.1.3.

There are no friends on the path of death. It is a path that you take alone without your parents, without your beloved siblings, without your beloved spouse and beloved children. It is a path that you must take alone. This path cannot be revisited, nor can you return from it. Once you take this path you can never return. P.769. top left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.1.

What was God's deep anguish? It originated in the fact that He could not educate His true sons and daughters to become people of perfected heart, that He could not educate them about the siblings heart, and the heart of a husband or wife. He could not educate them in the standard of heart that dictates what a couple should be like on earth. God could not educate them in how to become a couple and then how to be a parent. P.770. bottom right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.1.

Our departure to the spirit world is not a sad occasion. Raise the flag of heaven amidst the trumpet call for liberation. Go on boldly, undefeated. Raise the flag signaling your glorious return home. This is the path that lets you proudly enter your original hometown where the nation and all of humanity will welcome you with cheers. It is not a sorrowful occasion. We do not shed tears on these occasions in the Unification Church. What do we call this? We call it the Seung hwa Ceremony. P.779. right. Ch.1.Sec.2.4.

The shorter the time you may think you have (to live), the happier you will be. The shorter the time you think you have, the less you have to lose. P.784. right. Ch.1.Sec.2.6.1.

If someone has confidence that a life of faith is not preparation for the present life, the physical life, but is preparation for life in the eternal world, then he will keep his life of faith even if he is left to himself. P.785. top left. Ch.1.Sec.2.6.1.

Thus, in the future, only religious thinking can lead this world. If you can break through and overcome chaotic circumstances, and no matter where you are, keep to an absolute concept of eternal life despite experiencing all kinds of distracting situations, then nothing will be insurmountable for you. P.785. left. Ch.1.Sec.2.6.1.

Once there was a man whose wife died young, and who then remained single for the rest of his life, carrying her handkerchief. Nehru was this kind of person; having lost his wife when she was young, he wore roses on his clothes the rest of his life because his wife loved roses. P.786. top left. Ch.1.Sec.2.6.1.

This universe grew in size from a small point in this way: through partners coming into existence, unceasing motion occurred and the universe came into existence. The universe has been engaged in endless motion by the power of inertia that transpires in the dimension of space. P.788. top right. Ch.1.Sec. 2.6.2.

God values the concept of true love more than He values His own being. P.789. top left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.6.2.

Even God breathes. He breathes with love. P.790. left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.6.2.

That is why we dare the satanic world to oppose us. When they oppose us they have to pay compensation for the damages they incur. P.790. left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.6.3.

Didn't you all attend the ceremony for changing the lineage at the time you received the Blessing? You have to believe in this more than in your own life. Even though this is a ceremony of the Unification Church, you should not think of it as a religious ceremony. It is an injection to raise you from the dead. It is the antidote. P.792. bottom left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.6.3.

Changing the lineage is only possible when, for example, you do a forty-day fast or pass through a state of near death where you spew blood. P.792. top right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.6.3.

First, you should genuinely yearn for the Parents with all your heart. You will not receive salvation unless you attend the Parents with the attitude that they are the source of your life, the entirety of your hope, and the origin of all your ideals and happiness.

Have you ever offered attendance like that? You should clearly understand this. Therefore, you should have the firm conviction that you are the sons and daughters who can eternally unite with True Parents, to the extent that it surpasses the awareness of your very existence. You must have that kind of conviction. P.792. right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.6.3.

The spirit world is a warehouse in which the fruits of true love are to be stored. These fruits have never been produced to this day. I am talking about the term true love and its fruit for the first time, so they cannot be found in the spirit world yet. P.796. right. Ch.1.Sec.2.6.3.

You cannot reproach the father for not making money or not having knowledge. Why not? The reason is because blood relations, love, and life are not transmitted through knowledge, money or power. Through what are they transmitted then? They are transmitted through love! The fruit is produced through love. The fruit of life is produced through that love and the lineage is connected through that love. It is not through money. P.797. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.6.3.

Planet earth is the production line for creating the people of the Kingdom of Heaven. People are not produced in the spirit world. They come from the earth. God created the earth that we live on as the factory to produce His people. P.798. left. Ch.1.Sec.3.2.

Consequently, man and woman should marry and give birth to children. Without doing so, they cannot find their place in the spirit world. When a baby is born, you should come before God and offer that baby as a gift to Him. Without this gift, you cannot hold your head up proudly.

When you go back to your hometown, what is it you will be most proud of and want to show your parents? You will take pride in how well you raised your children. It is the same in the spirit world. When you go before God, there is no greater gift than bringing God's children, the people of heaven, whom you have raised on this earth. P.799. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

Therefore, when women and men go to the spirit world, they become one body and come to resemble God. Later on, they become God-like. You should resemble God. We say that God has dual characteristics. God's dual characteristics began from love. Through love coming to fruition, we resemble the original God and go back to Him. P.800. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

Why can we not give birth to babies there? The spirit world is a vertical world. It is a world in the form of a circle, with God as its center. P.800. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

Then why do people practice birth control? They do so based on a command from Heaven that states that the evil lineage should no longer be multiplied. P.800. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

If you leave such children behind on earth, you can stand in the same position as God when you go before Him in the spirit world. P.801. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

If the right of the firstborn son, which became the satanic foundation, is restored and Adam gains that birthright, the archangel will listen to Adam and follow him. Is this not so? If the archangel stands in the position to obey absolutely, he will come into the realm of God's love and Adam's love. Then, he naturally will follow Adam into heaven. P.803. Ch.1. Sec. 3.3.

Heaven is broad and vast. It is infinite! It is so huge! People have come and gone in the last hundred million years, but the spirit world is so vast that you do not know where they all are. Even if each person were to give birth to a hundred children, the Kingdom of Heaven is so huge that there would never be overpopulation. The other world can accommodate any number of people. Therefore, should you use birth control, or not? Once you go to the spirit world, the question becomes how many citizens of the heavenly kingdom you have created and brought there. P.804. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

Even if you are not learned externally, you will understand everything in your heart immediately. You will come to know everything important within a week. P.804. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

When you go back to your hometown, what is it you will be most proud of and want to show your parents? You will take pride in how well you raised your children. It is the same in the spirit world. When you go before God, there is no greater gift than bringing God's children, the people of heaven, whom you have raised on this earth. P.805. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

Among women who have given birth to many children, not one was evil. Why is this so? It is because each has the mind of a mother who loves her children and always compares and thinks about others as her own sons and daughters. Each naturally ascends to the stage of love in the realm of daily life. Those who have raised many children are, therefore, in the highest realm in the spirit world. P.805. bottom right. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

You live in the spirit world as you have lived on this earth. P.806. right. Ch.1. Sec. 3.4.

Habits can last for eternity; they are so difficult to change. Nonetheless, they can be corrected while you live on earth. You can clear away your old habits by overriding them with new ones. You should do this now. If you do not, you will have problems when you enter the spirit world. Once there, you will find yourself caught. P.808. top left. Ch.1. Sec. 3.4.

There is no forgiveness in the spirit world. P.808. right. Ch.1. Sec. 3.4.

When you go before God, after clearing up everything you did on earth, you should not just report what you did well. You should first report what you did wrong, and then report what you did right later. P.809. bottom left. Ch.1. Sec. 3.4.

There is no payment of indemnity in the spirit world. It is a liberated realm of perfection filled with the waves of love, so the possibility of indemnity or re-creation does not exist. There is no reproduction either. Since there is no mechanism to stimulate these processes, once you are fixed in a position, it is permanent. P.809. bottom right. Ch.1. Sec. 3.5.

If you can shed your sinfulness ten times a day, you should do so. This would gradually eliminate the burden of your past sins. In the spirit world, there is nothing to stimulate this process to take place. There is no such mechanism. P.810. left. Ch.1. Sec. 3.5.

In the spirit world, you can find stimulating elements of love, but you cannot offer indemnity in order to remove your sins. Thus, it takes a very long time to indemnify your sins in the spirit world. P.810. left. Ch.1. Sec. 3.5.

If you expect to release things in the spirit world, you will be disappointed to find that it is difficult to solve your problems there. You will not find any villains opposing you or any realm opposing your goodness there. Similarly, if something is wrong, instead of going against it, you will try to deflect it on its way. You should try to disassociate from it completely. P.811. top left. Ch.1. Sec.3.5.

If you control your body, striking it for three years or longer, you will then enter the realm of the completion stage of the growth period. Is this not so? If you make more of the physical side, the spiritual side diminishes. If you get rid of the physical side, the spiritual side will be elevated. Therefore, for the same reason, when you ignore the superficial things and attach importance to the deeper aspects of life, the spirit world will come closer to you. P.811. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.5.

Then, when you are engrafted to the original standard of conscience there will be a great surge like that in an electrical power plant when positive and negative interact. Consequently, changes occur in heaven and earth. P.811. bottom right. Ch.1. Sec.3.5.

When you pass to the spirit world, who is the first person you would like to meet? Whom would you want to meet? Have you ever thought about this? You cannot meet your mother no matter how much you wish to do so. You cannot meet her until True Parents liberate her. No matter how much you love someone, you will not be able to meet him or her. You will only be able to see that person from a distance; you will not be able to meet them up close. P.812. top right. Ch.1. Sec.3.5.

When human beings register into the heavenly spirit world, they should take with them a certificate that confirms the details of their life on earth. I am talking about a certificate of your entire life with which you can say, "This is how I lived. This is what I did." You are not the one who writes this kind of certificate. Satan should first write it for you. You should first receive the certificate from Satan and then receive Jesus' certificate. Then you should receive God's certificate. P.812. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.5.

If True Father forgives all the evil that you have done, the recording of that evil will be completely erased. Did you know this? P.813. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.5.

A person who works with nature is usually more religious. The world of religion is a world without ostentation. The earth and nature do not lie. If you invest your utmost effort, the results of that effort will be brought to you. There is no speculation. You will not make a fortune without effort. There is no inclination to gamble. When you become fifty years old, you return to nature. There is no better preparation for your way to the spirit world than living a life of faith immersed in nature. P.813. left Ch.1.Sec.3.6.

In the future, I will build a farm here and bring all the members from around the world. When you reach the age of sixty or seventy, you will grow things in nature, deeply experiencing the same heart as when raising children and deeply experiencing the realm of God's heart at the time of the Creation. Then, when you go to the spirit world, you can ascend to a higher level. Therefore, for those undergoing hardships in the Unification Church, I am planning to bring them to a farm in their later years and let them live in self-sufficiency in a country house. This is the ideal homeland. This is my plan. P.813. top right Ch.1.Sec.3.6.

When you pass the age of sixty, you should retire from public life, return to the farm village in your hometown, cultivate the earth and prepare to go to the spirit world. You will be busy preparing for the spirit world. For this reason, you should devote yourself sincerely and deeply involve yourself in a farming village, taking responsibility to guide its people the way I would. P.813. right Ch.1.Sec.3.6.

You should not go to the spirit world until you have accomplished something in the leisure industry and in your hobbies. Only then, can you go to a higher level in the spirit world, become a person with deep emotions, and be able to make good use of the great arena of the spirit world. P.813. right Ch.1.Sec.3.6.

You work until the age of sixty. After working until that age, you are freed from your period of public mission. Then you work publicly for three more years without pay. In order to prepare to go to the spirit world, you should not want anything in return. This is a training period. If you have good results, it may be extended to seven years. Then how old will you be? To make the foundation to go to the spirit world you can work until the age of sixty-seven working until the age of sixty and then seven years more. When this is done, you can be proud of yourself wherever you go. P.813-814. bottom right Ch.1.Sec.3.6.

In the future, what kind of communal system should you create in each nation? You should build a condominium system, and train people within that system where four families live together in unity. They should earn money together, eat together, educate their children together, and live as one family. If they fail to live together in harmony, those families will be pushed into a restrictive environment in the spirit world. P.814. right Ch.1.Sec.3.6.

Nature's artistry is displayed more vividly through a variety of weather, than a succession of fine days. When you feel loved in that environment, you can make clouds or fog appear in the clear sky of the spirit world just by wishing it. You can become a person with a special ability to create all kinds of manifestations of the mind through love. For this reason,

all of the spirit world will take an interest in you. Everyone would say, "Hey, being with this person is fun." P.815. right Ch.1.Sec.3.6.

A Buddhist monk or nun who does not know conjugal love is sadly disqualified from the kingdom. P.816. left Ch.1.Sec.3.6.

No matter how great you may be here on earth, you will be caught in the spirit world. Instead of feeling regret once you get there, saying, "I should have listened to Rev. Moon!" you should quickly make your decision to receive the Blessing. This is the fastest way to resolve these issues. You can learn through the Blessing. P.820. right. Ch.1. Sec. 4.2.

The purpose of the restoration of the right of parents is the restoration of kingship. The purpose of the restoration of kingship is the restoration of the right of the royal family. This incorporates the four great realms of heart. P.821. left. Ch.1. Sec. 4.2.

Adam is God Himself. He is the master of the family, but also God's body. P.821. bottom right. Ch.1. Sec. 4.2.

There is grandfather and grandmother even in the spirit world. There are people who are the age of your mother and father, the age of young adults, and the age of adolescents. If we condense this a little more, it becomes two people. P.823. left. Ch.1. Sec. 4.2.

You have to attend it more than you attend God. Attend your conscience more than you would the founders of religions, even Jesus. Then you can attain a position higher than that of believing in Jesus. Do not believe in me, the founder of the Unification Church. If you accept my teachings and become completely one with your conscience, you can go to heaven even without following me. P.823. right. Ch.1.Sec.4.3.

Amongst pastors, church elders, and those who carried themselves with pride, there are many who are bound in chains upside down. P.823-4. bottom right. Ch.1.Sec.4.3.

In the future, when people enter the Kingdom of Heaven the spiritualists will come forth. Those who committed evil will be pierced with a stick, as Jesus was pierced with a spear. You should be aware that a ruthless age will come. P.824. bottom left. Ch.1.Sec.4.3.

Though your conscience is the subject partner, humankind fell. Through the practice of love, your conscience must become one with love and stand in the position of the complete spiritual, intellectual, and eternal subject of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. P.824-5. bottom right. Ch.1.Sec.4.3.

However, a rebel inside your mind always challenges your conscience. That rebel is your physical desires. P.826. left. Ch.1.Sec.4.3.

Mind and body unity cannot be achieved without true love. P.826. left. Ch.1.Sec.4.3.

Even if a heavenly nation is established, you should know that a seven-year course based on the family will remain for each individual to accomplish. You have to go through this harsh course. P.827. bottom left. Ch.1.Sec.4.3.

In the spirit world, your conscience becomes your body and God appears as the conscience to that body. Your conscience becomes God's body. When you enter the mystical world and ask, "God, where are you?" He will answer from inside of you, "Here, I am here!" P.827. bottom right. Ch.1.Sec.4.3.

The point where a husband and wife make love is where they are both perfected. P.828. left. Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

Where is the greatest place a man can worship? Is it a woman's face? Is it her breasts? Is it her body? Where is it? There is only one place where concave and convex can fit together. The natural environment, the society, nation, world, universe, and Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world are brought into connection by this place. P.830. left. Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

God's wedding is Adam and Eve's wedding. P.830. left. Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

God's wedding is Adam and Eve's wedding. Consequently, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and the Kingdom of Heaven in the spirit world are created at the same time. They begin from the love nest. The moment a man and woman unite through their sexual organs without committing the Fall is the origin of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in the spirit world. That place is the base upon which the three great kingships should be established. The love nest can be built in no other place. P.830. bottom left. Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

Man was born for the sake of woman. This is the greatest truth of all truths. The ideal man is the greatest truth for a woman. This is the essence of the truth of the ideal that perfects the entire universe. For a man, an ideal woman is also the essence of the truth of the universe. She is an absolute embodiment of truth. P.832. right. Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

I never imagined that the fundamental problems humanity has struggled with, to this day, had such a simple and straightforward solution. I went through terrible hardships. Not knowing how simple the solutions were, I entered the spirit world and searched through things that were extremely repulsive and suffered all sorts of hardships. In the end, I discovered that the solutions existed within each one of us. I exclaimed, "Oh! This is what I did not know!" The answers lie within us. This is inspiring! The entire universe is inside you. It is inside every one of us. P.832. right. Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

You have to make your family life into a work of art. You have to become a pleasing and artistic husband. If you find something good in a magazine, you should bring it home and read it with a soothing voice to your wife when she is about to fall asleep. If you dream of your wife while falling asleep after having been deeply moved by this, your dream will be substantiated. This way of life will continue into the spirit world. How wonderful this is! Would you like to live like this, or would you like to live as very drab couples? If you wish to live such a life, you have to assume a new direction with a fresh mind-set enabling you to possess good vitality. This is the basic requirement. P.833. right. Ch.1. Sec. 4.5.

When human beings reach perfection, God's internal nature enters the mind of man, and God's external form enters the mind of woman. The substantial marriage ceremony for Adam and Eve becomes God's marriage ceremony. P.835. left. Ch.1. Sec. 4.5.

So, where is God? Where can He be found in relation to the couple? He is in the womb. This is where God is found. This is where the root of love is. P.835. left. Ch.1. Sec. 4.5.

The horizontal world can unfold only through Adam and Eve's sons and daughters. When this happens, the vertical world forms naturally. P.839. right. Ch.1. Sec. 4.6.

If you search for that which is true, you have to make your body live absolutely for the sake of your mind. When these become one, you can stand in a spiritually upright position directly connected to heaven and earth centering on God and you would know everything about the whole situation wherever you go, to the north, south, east, west, high, or low. You would automatically connect to the spirit world. You would know without having to learn. How did I come to know everything about the secrets of heaven and earth? I found out everything after achieving that kind of state.

After having reached the state where the mind and body resonated centering on true love, everything became clear. I could experience God fully. I could see the world of heaven. I could see history. I could see everything. P.842-3. Ch.1. Sec. 4.7.

Those who follow money cannot go on the path of eternal life. Those who follow knowledge cannot go on the path of eternal life. Where can you find eternal life in knowledge or learning? The more knowledge one has, or the more one knows, the more arrogant one becomes and arrogance borders the satanic world. The master of arrogance, the gang leader of arrogance, is Satan. P.843. right Ch.1. Sec. 4.7.

In the spirit world, stubbornness is the greatest enemy. P.844. top left. Ch.1. Sec. 4.7.

Once in the spirit world, each couple will look like one huge person. What are people like in the spirit world? Each of you will become like cells in the universal body. The entire spirit world will completely look like men and women. That's how it will appear. It will all be combined. If you walk in a certain way, the spirit world will walk that way. Those who are in that realm are like God's cells. They are one body. P.849. bottom left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

The speed of love is by far the fastest. The speed of light can cover 300 million meters or go around the Earth seven and a half times in one second. But love is thousands of times faster than this. If true love decides to go across millions and billions of miles, it immediately covers that distance. The vast spirit world can be activated in an instant. P.851. top left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

The color purple includes red and pink, and what other colors? It has all the colors in it. You like the color purple, don't you? Elegant things are in purple. In the spirit world, the most beautiful color is purple. P.851. right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

There are no handicapped people there, either. Those who are handicapped or have deformities will have no disability once they discard their flesh. P.851-2. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

How old do you look when you live in the spirit world? You live with the appearance you had at the age when you were the most beautiful. The more beautiful the way of thinking you have, the more beautiful your face and appearance becomes. P.852. left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

Still, the earth is the only place with a factory for producing the citizens of the spirit world. There is only one of its kind in the universe. What? Do you think that there are people living on Venus? This is the only place in the universe where there are people. P.852. left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

People need money, knowledge, and power in this world, but these things are not needed in the spirit world. If these are your focus, nothing in the spirit world will welcome you. Even if the spirit world were to show interest in you and want to unite with you, you could not have anything there. Nothing that stands against the original essence can become one with you there. You will not be able to catch the interest of the spirit world. P.855. bottom right. Ch.2. Sec.1.2.

People who lived so long ago could sense heaven with their hearts much more than those who live today. P.856. left. Ch.2. Sec.1.2.

When he appears in front of you, you will immediately know which level you are on; you will know if you are higher or lower than he. Even if he is your closest friend, if your level of love is higher than his from heaven's point of view, he will bow to you as soon as he comes to you. P.856. right. Ch.2. Sec.1.2.

But after your physical father goes to the spirit world, you will call him your brother, not your father. In the same way, you will call your physical mother your sister. P.860. left top. Ch.2. Sec.1.4.

In the spirit world the wrinkled grandmothers and grandfathers you remember will look much prettier than you. They will look more beautiful. They can remain in that state if they have love. P.861. right top. Ch.2. Sec.1.4.

That is why you do not have to feel lonely if you have no friends in this world. You do not have to feel sad when you live by yourself and die. When you go to the spirit world, you will have numerous close siblings above you and by your side. But you will not become their sibling automatically without doing something.

You can become their sibling only when you have attained the privilege of attending God as your Father. P.862. right. Ch.2. Sec.1.4.

After becoming completely united in the same way, a man and woman appear to be cocooned together, and they return to God on the basis of being one. (230-201, 1992.5.3)

In the spirit world, when a couple is truly one in spirit and body, at any time the man can become the woman, and the woman can become the man. They say that love is being one flesh, right? If you look inside a woman, there will be a man within her. Her husband will be within her. P.863. right. Ch.2. Sec.1.4.

In the spirit world, people will come to you from hundreds and even millions of miles away in an instant. When you meet them, you will know where they have come from by looking at their forehead. P.866. top left. Ch.2. Sec.1.4.

When you go to the eternal world, there will be a political system. But there is no need for an economic system. P.869. left. Ch.2. Sec.1.5.

There is no need to study history. However, if you think, "I want to meet so and so!" and call that person, he will only appear if you call him out of love. He will not appear if you are greedy and think, "Because he is a learned man, I will meet him to get knowledge." You will not be able to meet him. You have to have love. If you call a person with a loving heart, recognizing the difficulties he went through to become such a famous person, you can deal with anyone from the east, west, and all four directions. P.871. left. Ch.2. Sec.1.6.

The spirit world is a world of intuition where within a week you could obtain all the knowledge that a very intellectual person has acquired throughout his life on earth. P.871. right. Ch.2. Sec.1.6.

God's reason for creating human beings is that He longs for love. He could have remained by Himself, but for what did He create us? It is because He needs stimulating and impulsively expressed love. P.875. left. Ch.2. Sec.1.7.

There is no forgiveness if you deviate from the Principle. P.877. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.1.

But up until now, there have been no parents embodying God's love, who were able to leave the seeds of true love. There was no foundation on which to leave behind such descendants. Thus, heaven is empty. P.878. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.1.

You can only enter heaven when, based on God's love, you represent the family standard of true love and bond to the original parents. You have to be united with the true love of the true God and True Parents. Those who have lived together and are related to the children born from God's lineage can go to heaven. However, up until now no one has lived such a life before going to the spirit world. Therefore, heaven is empty. P.880. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.1.

You must invest yourself and then forget. If among a hundred members there is someone who is wearing poorer clothes than your sons and daughters, you should not be able to sleep. You should want to give him clothes. That is the heart of God, the heart of a parent. P.880. right. Ch.2. Sec.2.2.

Those who take national property and give it to their families will all hang upside down in hell. They will perish. If they don't go to ruin here on earth, they will hang upside down in the spirit world. P.881. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.2.

From now on, a long line of people will form to offer their property to heaven. It will be the longest line in the world. In other words, everyone should become a penniless person who has offered everything. Then there are only tears, mucus and blood left to offer. I was like that. There was nothing else left to offer. I offered all my life and property. If you have a savings bankbook for your sons and daughters, should you use that for them? Or should you use it for the salvation of the world? P.882. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.2.

Even in the face of death, Jesus cried out, "Father! If it is possible, please let this cup pass from me. But not as I wish, but as the Father wishes." Even as he died, he did not protest to God, but was ready, without questioning, to offer a complete sacrifice for the sake of God's will. Jesus' attitude brought him the closest to God because it enabled him to go deeper. In front of such a person, even God cannot do as He wishes. The one who strikes such a person will be instantly destroyed. God would personally inflict punishment upon that person. P.883. bottom left. Ch.2. Sec.2.2.

If we become strong based on love through living for the sake of others, it will be enough to save the world. P.883. bottom right. Ch.2. Sec.2.2.

Historically, the people called by God were usually over the age of fifty or sixty. Most of them were old, worn out and just one step away from their funeral and the grave. In the background of His providence, God was working with these hardened and withered people at that time, but He knew that in the future He would work with the young generation. P.884. bottom left. Ch.2. Sec.2.3.



Jesus said that heaven was in our hearts, but imagine how lonely and miserable he was when he could not say that heaven was in our families. So, as you have a family, you can even sing with happiness. We are given the opportunity to live this way. Yet, Jesus, the Lord of truth who came to save the universe, God's only begotten Son, could not even dream of the circumstances necessary for heaven. He wandered around for almost three years trying to revive heaven within our hearts by saying that the Kingdom of Heaven was within us. But then he was crucified. How utterly lonely and miserable His life was! P.885. right. Ch.2.Sec.2.3.

Suppose there is a dying person who says, "God, even though I did not live according to Your will until now, in my mind I tried to go to heaven. So please regard me as having established the proper indemnity conditions!" Because God is fair, He will bring that person to the position of wanting to go to heaven. God rewards him according to his actions, placing him in a position of wanting to go to heaven. That position can be just below paradise. Even people in hell are trying to go to heaven. P.887. left. Ch.2.Sec.2.3.

First of all, you have to make the foundation for heaven within your mind, and then, based on such a mind, make the foundation for unity between your body and God. This is the greatest challenge. In the end, it all begins from you. Hence, your mind is the base for heaven. P.889. right bottom. Ch.2.Sec.2.4.

Does everything work out just by having the internal and external match? You should align this with God's will. P.890. top left. Ch.2.Sec.2.4.

To commit suicide is the worst sin of all sins. It is an atrocity that destroys the universe. Such a person would go to the lowest level of hell. P.891. left. Ch.2.Sec.2.5.

You cannot eat without God's love in the spirit world. You do not have a right to eat. You have to realize that hell is a place where you watch but cannot eat, and know but cannot act. P.891. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.2.5.

God never sends people to hell. When people go to the spirit world, they go to hell on their own account. P.892. left. Ch.2.Sec.2.5.

If those people say with glaring eyes, "You shouldn't drink alcohol. Go to the devil!" they are just a group of good-for-nothings. They have no peace of mind. I am weary of them. When I see them saying, "That goes against the Bible, Matthew chapter so-and-so. You're going to hell," really, those rogues. If killing someone could save a nation, then don't you think they would pass a law to free the person who had killed for the sake of saving the nation? Those good-for-nothings! They have to think about that. P.894. left. Ch.2.Sec.2.5.

If God visits hell, the devils in hell will bow their heads. They bow their heads to Him. Even Satan cannot oppose absolute love. If God goes to hell, hell must adapt to Him. Even hell belongs to God. If God goes there, hell must open all its gates. P.895. top left. Ch.2.Sec.2.5.

You decide whether you go to heaven or hell. I do not decide. God does not decide. You are the one who decides. P.896. right. Ch.2.Sec.2.6.

Before Adam and Eve fell, they grew according to the ideal of creation, but they never attended God within a relationship of heart. P.897. left. Ch.2.Sec.2.6.

No matter how much effort you make or how well you do in this life on earth, the physical world has become such that you cannot establish a relationship with Heaven, the realm of God. This is the tragedy and bitter situation that we find on earth. P.897. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.2.6.

The blood of the enemy is coursing through your veins. You should understand that you cannot sever this with a knife or burn it away. P.897. right. Ch.2.Sec.2.6.

Genuine love exerts its influence on the enemy. If this love goes to the enemy once, twice, thrice and four times, the enemy will disappear for sure. It is because love has such great power that Jesus said, "Love your enemy!" P.897-8. Ch.2.Sec.2.6.

Those who go to the spirit world are all divided. In the other world there is no horizontal communication between people of different groups. Vertically, they communicate in a limited way. P.898. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

The spirit world is divided into two, the satanic world and God's world. If we can lay out a way that enables people to quickly move from the satanic spirit world to God's world of goodness, then the situation on earth will be naturally resolved. What kind of way is that? As long as we have a special method to enable the transfer of all the satanic individuals, families, tribes, and nations to the heavenly side, it is possible. When such a time comes to the spirit world, it will be reflected on earth. As a result, transformation of all kinds will quickly come about, and it will roll into God's world. P.898-9. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

Unless a bridge is built by way of religion, only a few special people can return to earth. P.899. left. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

Therefore, for those coming down from the spirit world, only the ones who are connected with the mainstream can come down. Otherwise, they cannot come and co-operate through the process of returning resurrection. P.899. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

If you go to the other world, you will find murderers, their victims, and all sorts of people staying there. That being the case, there are times when people brandish their swords to get their revenge. But many walls are blocking them. For that reason, evil spirits go to the descendants of their enemies and cause sudden deaths by accidents in order to bring them to the spirit world. These things must be resolved. In order to deal with this, it must first be resolved on earth. To resolve it, something better must be offered. It cannot be done without offering something that is better than the death of the enemy, something better than that which created such an enemy. P.900. left. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

Death is the biggest fear for humankind, but going to hell was the greatest fear for Jesus. Then, in hell, did Jesus become the master of fear or the master of happiness? Jesus went to hell and for three days had to go through the ordeal of overcoming suffering. P.900. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

Without unification in the spirit world there cannot be unification on earth.

Aren't the struggles in this world today unbearable? They are very difficult. However, the conflicts in the spirit world are more difficult than those on earth. When we think about this, the Unification Church members should not allow the words, "It is difficult," to come to their lips. P.901. left. Ch.2.Sec.3.2.

Can you bring unity on earth before uniting the spirit world? You cannot. That is the rule. For this reason, I drove the Unification Church members on earth into the jaws of death and mercilessly attacked them. When that happens, the spirit world cannot but help you all. P.901. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.2.

We should liberate the spirits in the spirit world, liberate the people living in the sinful world today, and liberate the future generations from here as well. The realm of liberation for three generations comes forth in this way. P.902. left. Ch.2.Sec.3.2.

Is there anything about those in the spirit world that is very different from those who have lived on earth to this day? Would they suddenly change? They cannot. You are harvested in the exact form you lived in this world. All those in the spirit world are, after all, just people who have lived on earth. When you look at it this way, the spirit world is no different from the world that people live in today. P.902. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.2.

In the spirit world, there are evil spirits, midway spirits, and good spirits. They dwell within the three stages of formation, growth and completion. By their relating to the completion of the third seven-year course, a path will be created that enables the good spirits to communicate with the earth. This is inevitable. Since the realms of formation and growth lie within the dominion of Satan, the evil spirits within the territory of evil influence have played a leading role, and evil people have dominated the entire world. From now on, the spirits will begin to be transposed. The spirit world comes down at this time of transposition, in which the evil spirits come down first. This time of change is the time of going beyond the growth stage midway spirit world and entering the realm of the good spirit world.

At the time of transition the good spirits will go up with the good people and the evil spirits will go down with the evil people. Until this time, good and evil were in confusion where each was replacing the other by going up and down. However, my view is that, from now on, we will enter an age of a new dimension where good and evil can be completely separated. P.905-6. Ch.2.Sec.3.3.

You should witness even when it does not go well. It is like throwing stones into the sea. You keep doing it without limit until the stones fill the sea and form a mountain. Through this, you grow in heart. Although the body does not change, your heart grows. P.906. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.3.

The six-thousand-year history has been a history of searching for one Adam, and a history of recreating Adam. This is why you should follow me. Eve cannot be created without Adam. P.906. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.3.

To this day, Satan and evil spirits have divided up this earth and taken charge of it. But now, the good spirits will take over the earth and be in charge of it. For this to happen, members of the Unification Church must shed tears, sweat and blood, and offer devotion. You should pray with a fervent heart greater than the devotion offered by Christians and more than that of the Islamic faith, Buddhism and all other religions. P.907. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.4.

Did you know that the people in the spirit world can only be saved through us? Therefore, if you live for the sake of those who have passed to the spirit world, the blessings from that world will come to you. If you can become such a person who can live and offer indemnity and repentance for the spirit world, then it will come down and be with you. The entire spirit world moves with you at the center. You have to know how indemnity and repentance are so important. P.907. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.4.

Just as the angelic world assisted at the time of the creation of Adam, the spirit world should return to earth and assist with re-creation. P.908. left. Ch.2.Sec.3.4.

Then what happens to the good spirits? In the past they came, offered their assistance and returned. But now they will settle down on the earth. P.908. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.4.

When the Unification Church moves, Mohammed will come to its assistance, along with all the representatives of Confucianism and Buddhism. Even God will come to its support. P.909-10. Ch.2.Sec.3.4.

The position of the perfected parents cannot receive the co-operation of the fallen spirit world. This is the reason the spirit world could not support and co-operate with True Parents until now. Isn't this how it was originally with the Principle? The position of the perfected parents should be supported by God and the unfallen archangel. No matter how numerous

the spirits within the satanic realm are, they stand in a position that prevents them from assisting True Parents. Since the spirits who are in the spirit world now, were not born from the True Parent but from the false parent, they cannot assist the True Parent.

But by indemnifying all the failures of the archangel, they can support as much as they like in the position of the children, that is, the position of Adam and Eve who are still growing. In this way, through the co-operation of the spirit world, the fallen world will gradually crumble and collapse in the near future. P.910. left. Ch.2.Sec.3.4.

According to a spiritualist, he calculated that there are about 3,320 spirits for each living person. P.910. top right. Ch.2.Sec.3.5.

Atheists will have no standing because they deny spirit world. They wander around in the spirit world like clouds. They become wandering spirits. P.911. left. Ch.2.Sec.3.5.

Your ancestors within ten generations are especially anxious, because the history of restoration is realized based on ten generations. But when an evil descendant appears, ancestors within ten generations judge him saying, "Hey you! You're going to ruin us!" P.911. right. Ch.2.Sec.4.1.

That is why those who raise the church flag, hang my picture and greet it everyday, would bring alive the work of resurrecting their ancestors. P.912. left. Ch.2.Sec.4.1.

The Unification Church allows for honoring ancestors and should carry on that tradition. In the future, however, this will be done with reference to the True Parents, and will thus differ from the secular tradition in the secular world. P.916-7. Ch.2.Sec.4.3.

If your grandparents are deceased, you should visit their graves. You should visit and pay your respects to them as if God were buried in that grave. As of that day, you are to make amends for the bitter sorrow of not attending your grandparents during your lifetime. P.917. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.4.3.

There is some element of truth in Christianity's ban on the performance of ancestral rites to this present day. This rite should be offered to God and the True Parent of all humankind. The ancestors ideally should be first served from heaven. However, due to the Fall, this has been prohibited until the present time. In the age of restoration, since you have received the Blessing, you should attend your ancestors from now on. P.917. right. Ch.2.Sec.4.3.

When the day for a memorial service comes, the firstborn son of the eldest son decides the time of the service. That is why you can hold the service at five o'clock in the morning, even if previously it was done at one o'clock in the morning. Depending on the circumstances, the time could be changed again from five to seven o'clock in the morning, or even sometime during the day. The person who decides this is not your grandfather or ancestor who has passed away, but the eldest son. The offering table can be served to the grandparents who passed away only when they come at the time designated by the firstborn son of the eldest son. If the grandparents don't like the time, they will not be served. P.917-8. Ch.2.Sec.4.3.

In regard to the firstborn son of the eldest son, even the grandfather comes under his command when that son performs the ancestral rites. The grandfather has to show his respect. The fact that Koreans place value in the lineage of the firstborn son, and also in their genealogy and lineage, holds record-breaking historical value in God's providence of restoration, which can never be forgotten from the deepest root of His mind. P.918. Right. Ch.2.Sec.4.3.

No matter how many children Adam has, the nation is centered on his first son. Then, with the first son at the head, his brothers spread out on both sides to become a tribe and nation. The first son succeeds to the throne. In Korea, this pertains to the firstborn son of the eldest son. This is truly amazing. What is great about Korea is that it could receive blessings from God because it has been protecting the tradition of the eldest son. P.918. Right. Ch.2.Sec.4.3.

The reason I told that special team to carry out a research project is because science is now highly advanced. I asked them to do research on the frequency that enables contact with the spirit world. The motions in the spirit world are all made up of vibrations. I instructed them to research this because we have entered an age where the existence of the spirit world can be scientifically proven. This can be done by discovering the frequency of vibrations used by spiritualists when they contact the spirit world. P.919. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.5.

When we enter the age where the unknown spirit world can be rationally understood, the age of religion will be brought to an end. It would be an age where humankind would believe in God even if they were told not to. This is a great task. P.919. right. Ch.2.Sec.5.

The concept that God is the Lord of judgment does not exist in God. If He harbors the idea of getting His revenge, God's ideal world would not emerge. That is why the concept of judgment by literal fire does not exist in God. Since the concept of the enemy is alien to Him, God raised Abel to have him bring Cain to submission through natural means, not by force. P.920. left. Ch.2.Sec.6.1.

The parent cannot find happiness when their beloved child falls ill. If God does not feel pain in His heart for the condition of human beings who have become the cause of national ruin, and who are falling straight down into hell, but instead, enjoys it saying, "Now! You got what you deserved and now you are going to perish, then such a God should be struck down by lightning.

Since He is an ideal God who represents the parental position, He does not just sit still on seeing these circumstances. When we think about the hidden heart of parents who would disregard the laws of their nation in order to save their own children, we know it is the same with God.

Were it not for Satan, God would forgive humankind and save them. Despite His desire, since God cannot avoid Satan's accusations, then with tremendous regret, He is compelled to accept those accusations. Who understands God's difficult and wearisome position? We should liberate Him from this situation. In order to do so, there must be such sons and daughters who can confront Satan and save those in hell. Without doing so it is impossible. P.921. right.Ch.2.Sec.6.1.

Laws cannot be absolute in the light of the universal law. P.923. top left.Ch.2.Sec.6.1.

When you read Christian sermons they seem so illogical. They really don't know the spirit world.

Will they go to heaven thinking like that? Go and see for yourself what happens. They will all be eaten up. They are worse than worldly people. P.925. top left.Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

Unless you repent, you will have to receive the judgment of righteousness. There is no one who can stand before the governing law of love. At that time I will become your attorney, my family and tribe will become your attorney, all those leaders in the Unification Church will become your attorney; even God would be your attorney. Only when the scope of attorneys exceeds that of the realm of accusation, can you be registered as the people of the heavenly kingdom of goodness. Anything less and you will not be able to register. P.928. top left.Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

Even if we face ruin together, do not go the way of a betrayer. Even if that befalls us, we will stand in a good position in the spirit world. P.928. top right.Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

You may call upon the name of True Parents, but have you ever attended True Parents? You can stand in a position of attendance only if you can stay up at night later than me. You can stand in that position only if you suffer more than me. P.929. bottom left.Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

There is nothing this satanic world can offer in building the heavenly kingdom. This must all be burnt away. That is why I made holy salt to sanctify these things so that they can be used again. P.929. right.Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

So far I have never shed the blood of another life with my hand. If the day were ever to come that I had to lift my hand, it would be a fearful one. P.929. right.Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

In order to find the true woman who can take part in true love... if I became half-crazy, took off my clothes and urinated right there, I wonder how many would remain. Why? You do not know how terrible the path was that I took. P.930. top left. Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

In the ideal times of the future, there will be no need for courts of justice. The course of our life in this world is the foundation and preparation course for eternal life in the next world. Therefore, if someone amongst your relatives does wrong, the entire tribe will deal with that person. Who is the primary judge? If the wife does wrong, the husband becomes the judge. If the child does wrong, the father becomes the judge. They are given guidance under the public law and their clan deals with them. P.930. bottom right. Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

In the future, when you commit a crime, you will not be dragged to a public court to be condemned. This will be done within your tribe. Such an age is coming. Hence, you cannot curse anyone. Your own mother and father will judge you. If the wife does wrong, her husband will pass judgment on her. In that case, who will punish the second generation of Blessed Families in the Unification Movement when they do wrong in the future? Their mother and father will punish them. P.931. right. Ch.2.Sec.6.3.

In the future you will not need the police. You will not need prisons. Those responsible for the tribe will gather and pass judgment on the family on behalf of the police and judge. P.932. left. Ch.2.Sec.6.3.

If a bad lot emerges from the younger generation, people should catch them saying, "You good-for-nothings!" and punish them severely. P.932. right. Ch.2.Sec.6.3.

When private matters are pursued beyond a certain point, that situation appears as evil. Private matters have a certain limit. When they go beyond that limit, they become evil, and they lead people to commit sins and to ruin. P.933. left. Ch.2.Sec.6.3.

Suppose those who sin a lot were sent to the North Pole. Such a time might come. Why should we feed such people? They would live off baby bears. They might be confined within certain boundary lines for some years. They would survive by eating anything they could find. After surviving a couple of years, they could come back. Such a time of isolation could come. P.933. right. Ch.2.Sec.6.3.

Now, if I said to God, "God, I'm tired of looking at this fallen world and spirit world. I wish you would make a new and better world," this would be possible. The problem is that Satan has not yet been liberated. I want to drive Satan into a bottomless pit. I do not want to see his shadow; I do not want to even hear a murmur from him. But, even after liberating him, there are still matters to be dealt with. P.938. left. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

Those who feel that they have lost out by knowing me, raise your hand. Those who feel this way are thieves. P.940. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

My teachings cannot be found in any library book either here on earth or in the spirit world. It is the first time, the very first occasion that these truths have been known! These are the new words of truth. They cannot be found anywhere else on earth or in the spirit world. They were locked away in the treasure storehouse and could not be taken out before, by God or any person in the spirit world or on earth. P.943. left. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

After I had proclaimed all these things in the spirit world, strong opposition arose there. In that world, a time of chaos came about for forty days. Satan resisted by setting the condition of denying God. As a result, the spirit world was divided in half, with one half against me. In the end, this chaotic situation had to be resolved based on what God decided to be true. P.943. bottom right. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

The ancestors in the spirit world said, "Rev. Moon, you heretic, you traitor!" Later on, even God said, "Yes, throw him away!" That is how the laws of indemnity are. Since Adam and Eve abandoned God, God also had to abandon them, conditionally. Enduring such abandonment, I had to win acceptance, restore God's support for me, recover my heaven, and receive God's seal of approval. During that period, God had to stand against me when someone accused me, P.944. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

How could Jesus, Confucius or other leaders know such principles? Eventually they only asked negative questions because what I said was not in the doctrine they taught. They insisted on their own views.

I battled against the entire spirit world for forty-three days. On the fortieth day even God said, "Rev. Moon, you good-for-nothing! Why have you come here and brought chaos to this peaceful heavenly world? You son-of-a-thief!" Everyone agreed with God. Still, I did not retreat. P.944. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

I had to argue with them in God's presence and go through a decisive battle that decided who was the Lord of righteousness. What was the issue at that time? It was concerning the stained lineage of all the people in the spirit world and whether they knew that they had to change that.

What was the second consideration? It concerned transferring the rights of ownership of all material things. I stated that, "Those who had rights of ownership during their life on earth are traitors to the Kingdom of Heaven!" No matter how great the founders of the religions were, they had to face this judgment. That is why, when I fought in the spirit world, I stood my ground in battle and challenged them confidently, asking, "Who's the heretic?" P.944. right. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

God had to make the final decision. He proclaimed, "The transition of the lineage, transition of the rights of ownership and transition of the realm of heart that Rev. Moon speaks of, are true." I then had to return here, to this world, after receiving God's seal as a victorious champion. P.945. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

Nevertheless, I insisted, even to God, that this was the only way, and that if everything did not follow accordingly, there would be no way to bring a logical order to the whole world. I pointed out that Confucius did not know about God's character. He did not know about God as a personal God. Confucius talked about heaven but it was vague. In a battle of questions he would be knocked down.

To Jesus, I asked, "Why didn't you speak about certain issues regarding your Second Advent?" He was taken aback.

Christians believe that the millennial kingdom will be established in the sky, but they will clearly know that is wrong when they go to the spirit world. When I asked searching questions of those religious founders, they could not open their mouths. Subsequently, I called upon God, "You make the judgment as to who is right." At the very end, God declared, "Rev. Moon is right!" P.945. right. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

It was the first time for all the leaders of religion to hear these things. They asked the meaning of the transition of the lineage, the transition of the rights of ownership and the transition of the realm of love. Even Jesus asked me about this every day. P.946. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

If you go to the spirit world, Confucius and Jesus are both friends. Buddha and Mohammed are friends. Famous saints from Christianity and high monks from Buddhism are all friends. A curtain is the only thing that comes between; they all belong to God's tribe. This curtain must be opened wide. When the religions unite, this curtain will be taken down and everyone will rejoice together as one family. They are waiting for that day in the spirit world. P.947-8. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

Then, how did the languages of the many nations diverge? God separated these languages due to the Fall of our first ancestors. P.949. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

Until the present time, Satan has tried to bring people to hell, but now he is bringing them to heaven. He is co-operating for this purpose and is trying to even bring our ancestors to heaven. P.952. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

I am now liberating and even blessing the people who did not live long on the earth or died without getting married, and all those above the age of sixteen. P.953. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.1.

Fallen humanity does not live in the Kingdom of Heaven God created. Heaven is a place where only perfected Blessed families can live. P.954. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.1.

Therefore, when people die, they will die together with the same blessing; when they live, they will live together with the same blessing. It is not the case here that those who seek to die will live, and those who seek to live will die.

When the True Parents are here, those who seek to live shall live. Those who seek to live with the True Parents will live. Without the True Parents everyone had to do the opposite. Paradoxically, without seeking death, you could not find the path of the True Parents or the place to attend them. P.955. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.1.

In the past, the demons would dig a pit based on their desires and prevent you from leaving for thousands and tens of thousands of years. They would use your ancestors as errand boys. I have now completely abolished all those things. P.955. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.1.

Those babies grow in the spirit world. They do not remain the way they were. The heart of the mothers who cry in sadness for these babies, allows the babies to grow. It is not wrong for parents to be sad about their child's death. Your deceased partner is actually growing in the spirit world. If the wife cherishes her deceased husband in her heart and grieves for him, he will benefit from that. P.956. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

Aren't there many adulteresses amongst women who were unfaithful? They will end up at the very bottom of hell. These days, many couples marry under a legal contract. Are you aware of that? They do not want to have babies. They do not want to have a family.

It is like that in the age of archangels. Can people without a baby know parental love? Would they know how to love children? They can never learn to love through making contracts. They are a group of wanderers, and in the spirit world they will just drift around. They have no basis that enables them to settle down. P.957. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

For this reason, I gathered all the spirits who died without being married and blessed them. The spirits of babies who died after they were born are also growing. I am blessing all those who were over the age of sixteen and who went to the spirit world without getting married. Those numbers will be in the billions. That is why I am holding the Blessing for them now. P.957. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

Even when babies die while still infants, they still grow in the spirit world. P.960. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

In the future if you have a child who goes to the spirit world, without having committed the fall, he will return to live with you in spirit.

Since I allowed the three-day ceremony for those blessed to people in the spirit world, those believers in the Unification Church who pass away from now on, can come to the earth and live with their husband or wife. P.960. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

I have given the Comfort Blessing, but from now on, it is for those under 50 years of age. I am now telling you not to give the Comfort Blessing to those over 49. Why do I say this? I say this because I allowed those blessed to people in the spirit world to do the three-day ceremony. P.960. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Up until this time, if your beloved wife were to pass on to the spirit world, you would be separated from her. When you go there, you go to a level according to your own spiritual standard. Once you arrive in that world, you can press a button on something similar to a video machine, and everything you did in your life will come up. It is all recorded. Your number will be called out, and the person who brings you away will already be waiting there. Then you will go to your place. Even if there were ten people in a family, they will all be separated because the standards of their spirituality are all different. They cannot meet each other. Now this situation has been resolved. P.962. top left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Now, heavenly fortune will follow us and assist us in everything we try to do. We used to exert ourselves to catch heavenly fortune but now heavenly fortune will follow us around and assist us. This means that the time has come for God and the spirit world to mobilize numerous ancestors and countless good spirit persons to assist people on earth. We can establish a realm of liberation. The age of transformation has come. P.963. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Shower holy wine in all the nations. Wouldn't everyone be revived after drinking holy wine? The liberation of the fallen world would be hastened. Even give it to the whole creation. Then, everything will return to God's side. Now I will shower the whole earth with holy wine using an airplane. Even if I do not reach everyone, I will spread it to the major cities and pray for them. You have to realize how fearful True Parents' prayers are. If I pray for the destruction of a nation it will be destroyed. P.963. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Just because you say that you will receive the Unification Church Blessing, or you receive the Blessing briefly, conveniently, and quietly without my knowing, it does not work. You have to go through the national-level Blessing. P.964. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.4.1.

In the future the entire world must be registered and included among the twelve tribes. When this happens you must record in detail your entire life everything from the time you joined the Unification Church to this day. You have to record everything, anything you did in the church, even if it was taking a handkerchief. If this does not match with the computer records in the spirit world you will not be able to go to heaven. P.965. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.3.4.1.

You will be warmly welcomed into the kingdom within the realm of heart of the royal family; there are no steep paths or walls there. It is like an open plain. Everyone will welcome you. It connects with the world of perpetual love. P.965. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.4.1.

No matter how many couples and children of this world there may be, they will be scattered and separated in the spirit world. They will be separated and will not know where everyone went. It will be difficult for them to meet each other. Without a reciprocal relationship they cannot meet. They are all separated in the spirit world according to the state of their

spirituality. That is extraordinary. If their whole family can unite based on love, they can be together in the spirit world. P.966. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.4.2.

Then, in what ways are Blessed Families different? The members of a Blessed Family cannot be separated from each other no matter how hard they try. When you pass to the spirit world, if your wife failed to fulfill her responsibility, you would take joint responsibility and bring liberation to her. Even if only the wife had done wrong, they would both be accused; even if the husband had done wrong, both would be accused; even if the children had done wrong, they would all be accused. P.966. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.4.2.

From now on, paradise will be created in the heavenly spirit world. You will have to wait there. The middle realm of the spirit world will be created there. Hell will be created there. A prison will also be created. Understanding this, you will know clearly where you will go. P.967. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.4.2.

Those who were blessed but failed to take part in registration are just the same as Adam's family that fell. When you enter the spirit world a prison on the heavenly side will be created. The middle sphere of spirit world will be created. A paradise for Blessed Families will be created. Lee Sang-hun's testimonies these days have become representative of the spirit world. Even in the middle sphere, those who have sinned must walk around with name tags indicating their earthly sins. They must be sanctioned according to how much they have deviated from the ninety-degree angle. No allowances will be made. Deviation has to be rectified even by force. Jagged parts should be cut off and made smooth. If this does not happen, they must be isolated in places like the North and South Poles. An age like this will come. You will see in the future. The spirit world is made that way. P.967. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.4.2.

This middle realm is in heaven, but it is not quite heaven; spirits will be locked up in the prison there. A hell-like nation does not exist far away, but is within a day's journey from there. People on earth are accustomed to time as it relates to hours, but to travel to a glorious place in the middle realm will be a year's journey. P.967. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.4.2.

How is the Unification Ceremony performed? It cannot be accomplished by grabbing any random thing. I performed this ceremony for Heung-jin by holding his sexual organ. Only by holding the Unification Ceremony of love for this son who was passing away without fulfilling the purpose of love, could he be directly connected to Jesus. Even Mother did not know anything about this. P.969. left. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

Therefore, the Christians in the spirit world who could not establish a connection to the earth, and all the other religions, can now do this through Heung-jin... Jesus should attend Heung-jin as the elder brother. By doing so, Jesus can connect to earth. Through these developments, the spiritual support in this world will swell rapidly due to spirits returning to the earth, and as a result, the satanic world will begin to crumble. It will start to go into a rapid decline. P.969. right. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

Heung-jin and Jesus should live in the same house. Jesus' adopted son should be entrusted to Heung-jin. P.970. right. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

The right of the eldest son does not only belong to America. Unity comes on the basis of people attending True Parents, the Unification Church, Heung-jin, and Unification Church members. After unity is established between such people and the Unification Church, they take the position of having the right of the eldest son. Heung-jin and Jesus should live in the same house. Jesus' adopted son should be entrusted to Heung-jin. P.971. left. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

Should you practice birth control? In the satanic world people have to do this but our Blessed Families should not practice birth control. However, if your body is defiled and you believe that you should not give birth to children the way you are, you should not do so. P.972. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

When the spirit world is put in order, the situation on earth can be resolved very quickly. P.973. top right. Ch.3.Sec.4.2.

The more you are persecuted, the more ideal and higher the place you will go to. P.974. right. Ch.3.Sec.5.

Since you have received the rights of inheritance, you should be able to influence your family surroundings in your own nation, even if it is only a shadow of the Parents' example. If you fail to become a trunk, you should become a branch. If you fail to become a branch, you should become a leaf. You belong to the tree. P.975. left. Ch.3.Sec.5.

When I slept at night with clenched fists, my hand would stiffen, so on one occasion God took my hand, spread it out and told me not to do this. Then I found that matters would be resolved. What is there to worry about for someone who believes in this kind of God? P.975. left. Ch.3.Sec.5.

The testimonies Dr. Lee Sang-hun gave on the spirit world are nothing. I know those things. The world may not believe it, but I know those things. I don't merely believe it; I know it. People doubt such things, but because they doubt, the spirit world does not help them. P.975. left. Ch.3.Sec.5.

Therefore, in rain or snow, I worked focusing on the sea. Liberation can come in the spirit world for all those people who were sacrificed at sea, and for those who lived in hell on earth. It is the same reason I gave the Blessing for those who died at sea. P.976. left. Ch.3.Sec.5.

I am now sick and tired of being weary, pestered, and rebuked in this complicated world. I have grown weary of this. P.976. left. Ch.3.Sec.5.

In this world, painful things can be avoided, but this task cannot be avoided. P.977. left. Ch.3.Sec.5.

Live with a fresh pioneering spirit, and you will not grow old. By nature, I will not die on my back. Until I die, I will always be in motion. I will move even if I have to crawl. It has been a continuum of suffering. The greatest humiliation to me would be to be very old, and need the attention and care of those around me. P.977. bottom right. Ch.3.Sec.5.

I believe that if I have taught and spoken about everything, the future generations will fulfill it. P.978. top left. Ch.3.Sec.5.

By my very nature, I cannot go to the spirit world and just sit on a throne and give orders... When I go there, I will become the brave soldier who will pioneer a higher dimension of the world of God's heart, a world beyond the imagination of the people in the spirit world, and which has not yet been found and reclaimed. P.978. left. Ch.3.Sec.5.

What will I be able to offer to God when I go to the spirit world? I am concerned about this. I worked for the nation and the world that God is longing for, and I lived to raise the future generations who will establish the ideal society and ideal world to come. I loved them as God does.

It would be natural for me to continue like this even when I go to the spirit world. It will be an exact extension of my life, nothing more or less than that. I am continuing to do that work. Since God is establishing His Kingdom, I will be near Him and accomplish that task with God. That is why God can say with pride: "My nation is your nation. With absolute unchanging love, you remained faithful after knowing me. With my love, you were constant through the raging storm, even though you were imprisoned and suffered contempt, and even though you were opposed by individuals, families, societies, nations, the world and the entire spiritual realm. With that same unchanging attitude as I have, you pursued that love and ideal. Thus, the nation you established is my nation. What you restored for the sake of humankind is surely my nation." P.978-9. Ch.3.Sec.5.

When spiritualists pray asking who Rev. Moon is, the heart of God can only respond in tears. Whenever I hear this, I simply say, "Father, it was nothing." P.979. right. Ch.3.Sec.5.

My life goal was to revive Heavenly Father's heart, so that when I enter the spirit world, He will want to welcome and receive me with great joy, as someone worth tens of thousands of times more than Adam. P.979. bottom right. Ch.3.Sec.5.

## **Book 7 – ETIQUETTE AND CEREMONIES**

Among all bonds of relationships, the standard is the parent-child relationship established between God and human beings. The heart coming from this bond cannot be undermined by the authority of any being and is eternal, unchanging, and unique. The authority of this heart is also absolute. For this reason, when you come forth with this authority, all existing beings will bow their heads before you. When you move with the authority of that heart, the entire universe must follow you. This is the ironclad rule of the universe. P.987. left. Ch.1.Sec.1.1.

When God and Adam become one and both are overflowing with love, Adam can become God. When Adam becomes completely one with God through love, God dwells in Adam. The Bible states, "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in you?" We are God's temple. P.988. bottom left. Ch.1.Sec.1.1.

You should live in attendance to God and True Parents. This should be evident when you are talking and when you are moving about. You should live a life of attendance whether you are asleep or awake. If you think in this way twenty-four hours a day, Satan cannot invade you. P.989. top right. Ch.1.Sec.1.2.

God is not a fantasy or a conceptual God, nor is He an abstract God. With His leadership in our daily life, He is always with us as the master of our daily circumstances. He does not just receive attendance but is living together with us by sharing love. P.991. left. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

Without making a beginning point where God enters our mind, and where we human beings become completely one body with God, there is no way of liquidating the devil's world. From this point of view, we can understand that this time is the age of attendance and the age of salvation by justification through attendance. We are saved through attendance. God is not a God who is way up in the sky far removed from us. We should attend God as the master in our daily life. P.991. left. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

Up until now, a life of faith brought salvation through faith, but from now on you attain salvation through attendance. Originally, if humankind had not fallen, we would be following our normal path by attending God. In attending God, you should attend Him wholeheartedly in your daily life. P.991. right. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

What is the purpose of our suffering for six thousand years? It is for the sake of understanding God's circumstances and His heart just as the Bible showed. It is for the purpose of understanding that God related to ethnic peoples and nations, as well as to individuals, with a parental heart and that He is our Father who has been wounded, trampled upon, rejected and torn to pieces. P.991. right. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

The Completed Testament Age is the age of love. Thus, you are permitted to marry. In the history of religion, higher-level religions did not allow marriage because conjugal love was not sanctified until now. P.991-2. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

Why do we seek justification by faith, justification by works, and justification through attendance? Without being justified you cannot distinguish between good and evil. The evil world and the world of goodness would not be separated. What is the standard of righteousness? It is God. What God believes, how He works and attends is the standard. Why is that so? Satan cannot accuse righteous people who resemble God. If you create an environment in which God's faith, works, and standard of attendance lives through you, then Satan cannot intervene. Even if you are within the satanic realm, if a



righteous standard is created that enables you to be with God in such an environment, Satan will withdraw from there. P.992. left. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

Even in the Completed Testament Age, we need to do works, we need to have faith, and we also need to lead a life of attendance. There are the stages of formation, growth and completion which remain; these cannot be separated. P.992. top right. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

When men buy suits for each season, they should be doing that for Heavenly Father as well. However, since He does not have a body, they should combine a monetary offering with their devotion instead. During these seasons, they should make an offering in the donation box for the sake of the church, with a tearful heart of attending God, regardless of whether anyone is watching. If they can do so, that devotion will accumulate in the Ark of the Covenant. P.992. right. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

What is the use of faith alone? You can fulfill everything by leading a life of attendance. P.992. bottom right. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

If you strive to become the absolute object before the absolute subject, you become absolutely one. Thus, everything that you see, hear and feel, even the loving relationships in your family, are for the sake of God who stands as the subject partner to you as His object partner. Everything works like this. Such a family will never perish. P.994. left. Ch.1.Sec.2.2.

You must live with God in order to establish the victorious realm of dominion. P.994. bottom left. Ch.1.Sec.2.2.

What does it mean for you to serve with all your heart, with your entire mind, and with all your devotion? It means to offer your life. Is there anything greater than that? To devote yourself with all your heart means giving up your life. To serve with all your mind and devotion means giving up your life. Isn't there a saying, "Sincerity moves heaven." Is there a limit to sincerity, an end to one's devotion? Put your life on the line and offer devotion. God will recognize the person who is ready to sacrifice his life and offer a life of devotion. P.994. right. Ch.1.Sec.3.1.

I'm not saying that you should force yourself to lay down your life if you do not want to. I'm saying that you should joyfully be willing to do that. P.994. right. Ch.1.Sec.3.1.

You must love God with your life. If you love Him with your life, then, until your death, you can do anything. P.997. left. Ch.1.Sec.3.2.

You have to be a bit stupid in order to follow this path. If you look at it in a certain way, loyal subjects were rather foolish people. They seemed to be somewhat stupid. They had the character of a bear. You have to have the kind of slow-wittedness that, if you had your arm cut off, you would simply say, "Oh, this is not cut enough. Please cut off some more." If bears or wild boars get shot and are slowed down by the wound, they will chew off the wounded limb and run away. The last thing they think of is death, and the first thing on their minds is the wound that is slowing them down. You have to have this kind of slow-wittedness. Patriots and heroes were a bit foolish. You have to be a little stupid. P.997. right. Ch.1.Sec.3.2.

The minute I open my eyes from sleep I kneel on the floor and pray. Why do I live in such a way? It is because, even in the middle of the night, my beloved children spread across the world depend on me as they pray to God. Even though I cannot offer devotion together with them, shouldn't I keep time with them just the same? Since I am unaware of this when I am asleep, even God forgives me. When a child falls asleep in fatigue at that hour, God prays on his behalf in the same way a father watches over his child. P.998. left. Ch.1.Sec.3.2.

What should you do to receive the love of the Parents? You must love everything that is loved by Parents. Only then can you receive love from them. In a family, if a son wants to be loved by his parents, he needs to understand that he can only receive love from them when he loves everything that they own. If someone wants to receive love without doing this, he is no better than a thief. If a child claims everything that is valued by his parents just because he wants to, he cannot receive love from them. P.1000. right. Ch.2.Sec.1.1.

A member once made rice cakes containing mugwort for me. He had them wrapped in order to keep the dust off and brought them to the headquarters. When he opened them in front of me, the rice cakes had started to spoil. Although they were unfit to eat, those rice cakes were worth hundreds of millions in gold. My heart feels closer to such people. P.1003. left. Ch.2.Sec.1.2.

Would you exchange True Parents for all the money in this world? Would you exchange True Parents for your life? Things are different from how they were in the past. Wherever you may go, you have to visit Korea to serve True Parents. Your sons and daughters and your descendants of a thousand or ten thousand generations all must do the same. This is why the Unification Church is unique. P.1006. left. Ch.2.Sec.2.1.

Amongst the church members, some say that they can go to the movies because I often go to the movies. They don't understand. In the past, I never even went in front of a movie theater. It is not a problem now, since I went through so much training and equipped myself with such self control that no matter where I go, I am not infected or dominated by those places.

Yet, there are some silly people who say that they will just do as I do following me when I go down to the country or using crude language because I do. I have lived a life of attendance to God, and even served and bowed respectfully to young children until the time came that I could speak without using honorific language. After knowing God's will, people

feel awkward to such an extent that when I speak to them in respectful language they cannot respond with their faces raised. Imagine how awkward it would be if I had to treat you so politely. P.1009. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

Today, most laws in this world find their basis in Roman law. However, morality is based on conscience rather than law. The foundation of conscience is goodness. The standard of conscience is the standard of goodness. When you move away from goodness and do wrong, your conscience tries to correct your error. If people tried to create a universal social system in accordance with the conscience, they would still need laws. Where is morality rooted? It is rooted in the heavenly law. P.1009. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.2.

Christians affirm that the omniscient, omnipotent, gracious, and loving God will forgive us even if we commit sins tens of thousands of times. Then, as soon as they leave church, they start fighting. The church is not a place in which to repent after committing sin. If God is a being who can easily forgive so many sins, there is one big question: why did God not forgive the single sin that was committed by Satan in the Garden of Eden? What do you think? If there had been a way for Satan to be forgiven so easily, he would have repented. He would have repented tens of thousands of times with tears. P.1012. left. Ch.3.Sec.1.1.

If the church were to divide into two and the two into four, and if it divided three times in this way, God would leave the church. That is the way of the heavenly principle. Instead, people will gather as families. Those with grace will gather as families. They will not go to church. They will kneel in prayer in their families. Wait and see if this happens or not. P.1012. left. Ch.3.Sec.1.1.

Those who say they go to church for someone else's sake, for their beloved sons and daughters or for their beloved husband or wife, will not be able to go further. They should go to church for God's sake. You should go to church to attend God as your own God and to find God's love as your own love. P.1012. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

A public church is more precious than your own home. P.1012. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

You can reach the Kingdom of Heaven through the church. The family must pass through the church. So the church is a foundation for families to bring victories, a place where family laws emerge, a place where nobility of character is recognized, and it is a training ground for the Kingdom of Heaven. P.1012-13. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

Some say they must witness to those who are handsome and young, but that is absurd. The church is the extension of our family. There should be grandmothers and grandfathers, aunts and uncles, and young people. If there were only young people in the Unification Church, it would be sick. This must be quickly corrected. You should know how to attend your elders. Your grandmother and grandfather represent God; your mother and father are your parents; and with you and your children this makes four stages in all. Your grandparents, your parents and you are three stages. P.1013. left. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

When we look at the attitude of our church members about the time for church meetings, we see they are not serious. Because your views about the public meetings of the church are vague, your understanding about the direction that God's will is taking is also vague. Since you do not understand precisely what internal position you should stand in, you do not have a clear external standard. P.1013. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

If you look at some people, you see that they do well in church life but not so well in social life. On the other hand, you see others who do well in social life but not so well in church life. Those who do well in social life but not so well in church life do not possess the important factors and contents to bear fruit. Between those who do well in the church but not in social life, and those who do well in social life but not in the church, the person who does well in church life is better. Those who are equipped with the important factors enabling fruition can move forward with tomorrow's hope, but those who are not, cannot bear fruit. P.1013. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

You should find and establish a standard that enables you to prove that you are God's child through your lineage, through the truth, through your life, and through your work. Without doing so, going to church and engaging in a life of faith would be nothing more than the life of an errand boy. P.1013. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

If you consider the triangular relationships among the family, church, and society, should your focus be on the family? Should it be on the church? Or should it be on the society for your own success? Think about it. For which person would God have more compassion and understanding? Thinking of the church means loving people as God does. It also means bringing salvation to the people. P.1013-14. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

Some say they are going their way centering on God's will and believe arbitrarily, "What I am doing now will become God's will." Do you think God would dwell in such a person? P.1014. left. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

The purpose of our observing the Sabbath is to promote the path to our salvation. Furthermore, it is to increase the importance of the goal of world salvation and of seeking the nation and world of God's providence. P.1015. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

The time for worship is the time for offering. You should make atonements for your past before God. Hence, the time for worship is a time without freedom. P.1015. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

The time for worship blocks the advancement of all of Satan's authority and is a time of promising the Father that you will return the glory of victory to Him. P.1015. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

The time for worship is a place more serious than when you meet your enemy in battle. P.1015. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

The amount of time you come early for church service will be offered to God. Thus, its value cannot be exchanged or bought with any amount of gold. The time for worship is an offering to God. Hence, to come late to service is stealing from God. You should be on time for service. By doing so, you can stand before God with dignity. Then you can come closer to heaven with a heart better than that of yesterday. However, if you come late, even when you pray, you will sit there blinking your eyes wondering, "What is Father going to talk about?" When I see you sitting there like that, you look pitiable beyond measure. P.1015. right. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

When the fallen ancestors were expelled from the Garden of Eden, they were shedding tears as they left. You should be able to shed tears of joy in such a way that you can meet God with a smile on your face. Nevertheless, those who have not first shed tears of God's sorrow cannot shed tears of joy. P.1015. right. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

You should be preparing with an eager heart three days before worship service. You should enter the gates of the church while passionately praying for the happiness of all people, so that they may connect to the authority of resurrection and life. You should attend service with a heart that is full of emotion for God. Yet this will not be enough. Instead, you are more brazen than a traveling salesman. P.1015-16 Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

For Sunday service you should purify yourself by bathing, offer a deep bow before God, and go to the holy ground to pray. Although people may not come, you must lay the foundation of heart enabling God to look kindly upon your village and work with you. You are never lonely when you pray alone with tears in front of God. God is with you; you will never be lonely. If no one is restored from that village after you have totally devoted yourself for more than three years, that place will go to ruin. P.1016 left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

Even when you come to the service, instead of coming thoughtlessly, you should have invested your invisible heart and offered devotion for more than two days. The longer you do so, the more you will shine. For this reason, the greater your heart is, the more Heaven will protect and shield you. If the wife thinks all day about her husband with her invisible mind and then smiles with her visible face, a light of glory will shine through. That smiling face has a captivating power that draws her husband near. It follows the same logic. P.1016 left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

In the future, the messages during service will be given in the form of reports rather than sermons. Families should report about things of which they are proud. The entire family must come and offer worship. The reports of successful families will serve as an example; less successful families, by following this example, will be guided toward success. In this way, the family Kingdom of Heaven will be built. Without building the Kingdom of Heaven in the family, the Kingdom of Heaven on earth will not be established. P.1016 right. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

Church service is a time for battling Satan. It is a showdown. P.1017 left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

Is it right for people who offer devotion to be late for service? Such people should be so ashamed that they cannot show their faces. They should feel that they are the greatest of all sinners. They must pledge to be on time and offer even greater devotion than others. How can you pray, "Oh! Heaven most high!" when you do not even come on time! Your devotion is not for others to observe. If you want to offer devotion at church, you should come to church on foot, rather than by car. You should not just come here and pray. Rather, you should pray before coming and then come here to pray even more earnestly. This is how you should offer devotion. P.1017 left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

Time is more important than anything else when coming before God. If you cannot be on time, you will fail. If you fail to connect to the right time, you will perish. God demands a sanctified environment and an utmost pure heart, but you cannot even be on time, and when late, you sit in the back and sing praises. God does not want such praise. P.1017 right. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

You should feel the same heart of longing for members as you felt for your first love. P.1022 left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

You should stay up all night making devoted efforts to raise core members. If you can offer this effort for three days, they will bond with you and feel grace that will stay with them throughout their lives. If you witness with strong determination, feeling that time is too short, and become anxious when your guests leave because it is late, then the spirit world will cooperate with you. P.1022 left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

You should go through indescribable hardships in raising members, just as I have done. P.1022 left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

Those who let their church leader starve and still ask for blessings should have their mouths filled with sand. P.1022 right. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

When you talk past twelve midnight until two or three in the morning and you think, "I wish they would leave. I should get some sleep," they would all run away. Even when it is three or four in the morning, you should be thinking, "I hope they do not go. I wish that time would stop." When they return home after experiencing that situation, their spirit will realize how important it was. They will feel sorry and, immediately after eating, will want to go back. I have been working in this manner. P.1022 right. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

Even if that person stops coming to the church, you should not cut him off or despise him. Even if that person falls away, you must never abandon the relationship that you have made with him. P.1022 right. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

Therefore, never be discouraged if a member falls away. When a member falls away, a very interesting phenomenon occurs: A person who resembles that person's character, speech, and even the way he walks, will join the church. From every angle, the new person who joins amazingly resembles the person who fell away, and yet he is much better. When

you see such a phenomenon, you can understand that sincere investment and prayer are never lost. This is an absolute fact. P.1022-3 Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

If there is something bad, do not get rid of it right away. Even if there is something bad, you should deal with it, having the flexibility and capacity to find some conditions that will improve it while you keep the bad aspects on hold. If a person is cut off due to a mistake he made a year ago, then he may spiritually die completely. But if he is kept for one, two, or three years in the belief that the mistake is a secondary consideration, then after that time there may be a way for him to live. P.1023 left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

If you love the members who have just joined, then they can quickly set the condition for indemnity. The reason the church is not able to make progress is because this is not being done. This is the reason why God said to love each other and live in harmony. P.1023 left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

In the early years of our church, when I was raising members in Korea, I did not sleep at night. I employed a one-on-one strategy. When I was giving a lecture to one person, I imagined that I was giving it to an audience of a hundred or even a thousand people. I thought that that particular person could determine the lives of several thousands or even tens of thousands of people. If you want to have a person follow you, whatever your directions may be, you must invest yourself totally into creating such a motivation in that person. P.1023 bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

To become a leader, you must truly stand in the position of the doctor who cures the sick. If an ill person's spiritual situation begins to deteriorate, you will have to make an effort to cure that person's heart while you shed tears day or night, oblivious to time. That is a spiritual leader. How many nights have you stayed up trying to save lives? How busy have you been trying to save lives? P.1023 right. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

The greatest enemy is the problem that exists in man-woman relationships. Through this, the world came to ruin and the laws of heaven and earth were violated. I am stating clearly that those who are not confident about this should not participate in the Blessing. If you receive the Blessing and bring ruin and go to the spirit world, I will have nothing to do with you. It will not be my responsibility. Once caught, there is no escape. You should clench your teeth and never deviate. P.1024 left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

From now on, you must take extreme caution regarding the relationship between man and woman. Those who have exchanged words with the opposite sex, saying that they like each other, can never become leaders. That should never be allowed to happen. P.1024 left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Hence, in the Last Days, women are destined to discern between good and evil in their relations to two men. When a man joins a religion and disciplines himself, at the final summit, a beautiful woman will appear before him to tempt him. If he succumbs to this, he will fall off a cliff into a bottomless abyss. P.1024 right. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Even among the leaders of the Unification Church, there are those who might misuse public money or material things. They might be tempted to use public money to take care of their children out of sympathy for them. Misusing money tramples the hearts of others. This is the same as supplying your children with poison. There is no doubt about it. This will become a condition through which the satanic world will accuse these leaders. P.1024-5 Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

The most fearsome laws among the laws of the spirit world are those regarding the embezzlement of public funds and unkind treatment of a person in a public position. These are the most fearsome laws. When a leader or a person sent by God is treated unkindly, the nation and world will be judged. P.1025 left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

From now on, you have to be thorough in distinguishing between public and private matters. Public money is poison let loose by Satan. You will be ruined if you misuse public money. Public money causes all kind of problems. Treacherous servants emerge from there. They bring their nation to ruin and even sell their nation. P.1025 right. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Sermons should be given with the same intensity of feeling as a woman who is in childbirth. You must focus all your attention there. When you stand before the podium, you must feel like a pregnant woman on her way to the delivery room. If you reach that level, you need no preparation. The content of your sermon is not the issue. P.1025 bottom right. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

Without having deep experiences, spiritual leaders cannot do their work. They may prepare their lectures by referring to books and give their sermons based on books, but is God within those books? He is not. God exists as a divine spirit, and your sermons will not be effective if you do not connect to His spirit. P.1026 bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

If you gave a sermon for one hour without giving any inspiration, you have to repent for three hours. This should be clear to you. If you give a poorly delivered sermon and you do not inspire them, you have to repent in excess of three times that time period. P.1027 left. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

You may want to say on Sunday, "Where in the Bible shall we read from? Break out the hymns! Break out the Holy Songs!" Do not do this. This is not what you should do. Center your words on your knowledge of people; use real life resources and relate them to comparable passages in the Bible. Give an interesting sermon that compares personal experiences with the content of the Bible. Then the mind of that listener will be completely blown away. When he hears about his own experiences, he will like it. Do not attempt to do it by looking at books. Books come from people as well. You must know that people themselves are the original books. P.1027 bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

Church leaders should undergo many hardships. They should go through a lot of life training. They need to experience the lives of a poor laborer, a beggar, a top executive, even someone with the highest authority. Then, with all those experiences in such a public position, your testimonies will be more real. P.1027 right. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

I spend more time praying for members than praying for the sermon itself. I pray with sincere investment: "Heavenly Father! What must I do to raise these people? Is it this or is it that?" Then I give the sermon as my mind directs. P.1027 right. Ch.3.Sec.4.2.

If you have an intimate relationship with God, do not worry that you did not prepare for your sermon. You need that kind of experience as well. Even when I meet famous people and must speak up to ten times a day, I must talk about different things each time.

But do I prepare for each and every one? My heart at those times is to completely have the consciousness of an offering. There is no "I". There is no concept of my existence. There is no sense of having possessions. Heaven is with us when we stand in a position of absolute dedication. P.1028 left. Ch.3.Sec.4.2.

You must be strict with public funds. You should be thorough in your tithing. You should offer one-tenth of your total income to God without fail. P.1029 left. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

By offering a tithe from your material possessions to God, you can establish a condition equal to having offered all that you have. Even if you do not offer everything to God, offering a portion of it with all of your heart and mind will enable the rest to be considered holy. The person who tithes will never perish. As days go by, his storage room will be filled with more material blessings. P.1029 left. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

You will never starve if you can tithe with sincere devotion. As a rule, your descendants will never suffer for want of material things. Invest your devotion in offering tithes; this is the essence of faith. Just offering it in a mediocre way will not work. An offering is something that you offer on behalf of your life. That is why you should offer the thing that is most important to you. P.1029 left. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

From now on, you are not a member if you do not tithe. You should offer three-tenths of your income: one-tenth for the nation, one-tenth for the world and one-tenth for the church.

It is absolutely essential to tithe in our daily lives as we go this way. You should not consider your income your own or use it as your own. P.1029 right. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

When you make a donation, you should not use money left over after purchasing something to eat. That money is defiled. Furthermore, God would not be present when a donation is made with change after purchasing things at the market. P.1030 left. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

Making an offering for the maintenance of the church after dealing with your own expenses first sounds extremely good, but it is bad. Making an offering to God should be the first priority in life, before thinking of your own life. Thinking that you are offering a percentage of your income can easily lead to a habit of putting your life first, before God. If God is placed as a second priority, He will later end up being in the last place. P.1030 left. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

In the fall, when you harvest grains, a tithe from what you reap must be separated and stored in a separate barn. Then, during the year, your children and relatives should gather together and humbly offer that tithe with sincerity and love. P.1030 right. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

If a donation basket is being circulated in the church as an act of a beggar holding the sign of a church, God would not be happy with it. P.1031 left. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

You make donations to me, but I do not receive it. My policy is not to receive. What did you do to get that money before making that donation? Unless I know that, and stand in a position where I am not ashamed of it, I cannot receive it. Since I have such a mentality, God desires to give and give more. P.1031 left. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

Today, what would you call the way of collecting donations in most Christian churches? They circulate bags for the donations. In the Unification Church, do you receive donations in that fashion? Do you collect using some kind of mesh strainer? Before people leave, you should place the donation boxes at the entrance. People will donate as an act of devotion and expression of your gratitude for having received grace from God. Those who do not want to donate will avoid those boxes. P.1031 right. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

You should offer the first of anything to God. Pure things should be offered in front of God. God will not be with you unless you offer something pure. Your daily habits should be carried out in this way. P.1031 right. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

The things that you manage well should be offered to God through the True Parents. In other words, unless they go through the process of belonging to the True Parents and God, they cannot be yours. P.1032 left. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

In terms of the life of tithing in the church, ten families in the church should support a church leader. Otherwise, you do not have the right to become a citizen of the heavenly kingdom. Ten people should support one heavenly person.

Tithing applies to every aspect of life. Even in a school, one in ten classrooms should be used for less fortunate children, to give them classes free of charge. From now on, you need to tithe not only your materials but also your time.

It is no longer only the material aspect like in the past. If you have ten family members, one family member should be offered to the public mission on behalf of your entire family. P.1032 right. Ch.3.Sec.5.2.

This indemnity fund is for indemnity on a world level. You should offer the money you gathered while shedding blood and sweat for this fund. You should not pay from the deposits you have in the bank. P.1034 left. Ch.3.Sec.5.3.

I continuously prayed even for those who fell away. Then, a person like that appeared spiritually in front of me and spoke mournfully with tears. He sadly confessed that due to the weakness of the flesh he had to leave me and said farewell. In such a miserable circumstance, I could not help feeling pity for him. Even though that person left in such a way, I had to continue to pray for him. Why? Since that person left without fulfilling his responsibility, until his successor appeared I had to pray for him.

As long as such a foundation of devotion exists, even if a member falls away, God will surely send a righteous person as a replacement. P.1034-5 Ch.3.Sec.6.1.

Even when I was tortured to the point where I threw up blood and collapsed, I prayed, "Dear Heavenly Father, please do not shed tears over my blood. This is going to be shameful blood, and any tears will be soaked in lamentations and resentment. I do not want heaven to sympathize." Therefore I did not pray for myself, even when I went into prison. P.1035 left. Ch.3.Sec.6.1.

You should shed tears and enter a serious state of mind that melts the bone marrow and calls for a one-to-one showdown. You should enter a state where you can have give and take with God with such an obedient mind that God cries when you cry and you cry when God cries. Whatever happens, you should be able to do that. To do so, you need to pray. You need a root and that root is prayer. P.1035 right. Ch.3.Sec.6.1.

When you pray, you should not foolishly doubt whether your prayer will be answered or not. P.1035 right. Ch.3.Sec.6.1.

As a leader, you must know how to follow this essential path of the Principle. Therefore, you must pray. Pray deeply about the relationship between you and God, thinking about how much God loves you. Also, you must pray and invest in members, reflecting on how deep are the relationships you have made with them. You must pray until the relationships become smooth and round. P.1036 left. Ch.3.Sec.6.1.

Those who have faith in religion just for their own benefit will abandon God after they receive blessings. That is because receiving blessings is their goal. After a while, they will fall away. You must pray from the viewpoint that seeks to find what God desires. Then we must pray to God to bestow blessings upon the whole world. P.1036 bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.6.1.

That is why I like nature and treasure the time of solitude. I truly like the tranquility of the night. P.1036 right. Ch.3.Sec.6.1.

Will the Christians of today go to the heavenly kingdom by attending worship and singing praise? No way! Would they be able to go to the heavenly kingdom if they start fighting, exchanging blows, and doing all sorts of things after coming back from church? P.1037 left. Ch.3.Sec.6.1.

You should not feel lonely or sad just because someone does not pay much attention to your words, even after you poured your whole heart into that person. The principle of heavenly law is that you will never lose your investment. Those who understand that will be blessed. They will never become sorrowful or lonely. Soon, the time will come when the spring breezes will start to blow. On the other hand, to those who could not receive your heart and efforts, an autumn wind will blow. This is telling them that their time is coming. P.1041 left. Ch.3.Sec.7.1.

In the Last Days you must pass through the three stages of judgment. These are the judgment of truth, judgment of character, and judgment of heart. P.1041 right. Ch.3.Sec.7.2.

When you go to the spirit world, if you have not fasted for Heaven for at least seven days, you will be unable to register in the spirit world. Why? Because God toiled for six thousand years in the course of restoration, and therefore you should fast and be thinking about His labors. That is why there is the seven-day fast in the Unification Church. It is not to make you suffer but to allow you to set a condition of striking your body in front of heaven. P.1041 right. Ch.3.Sec.7.2.

If people understand the true meaning of the word indemnity, then they will all like it the most. Without indemnity, there can be no blessing. Indemnity is the invaluable nugget of gold in the Unification Church. It is an amazing word that can face death, sacrifice everything, and overcome all difficulties. P.1042 left. Ch.3.Sec.8.1.

The path of Abel is one of being struck first and then taking back everything. At first, it seems that Satan is winning because he is striking first. But in the end, he has to return everything, after adding to it some original goodness that is in him. The evil side, even if it conquers others, will not be triumphant. Instead, even the "Original good element" within the evil side will be seized.

In other words, the way God works is as if He makes a rice cake and then hands it over, and when He takes it back there are powdered beans added on the surface. For a short period, evil flourishes and stands in the position to strike goodness, but that does not mean that Heaven will decline. P.1045 right. Ch.3.Sec.8.2.

When we look at the members of the Unification Church and ask the question who is Cain and who is Abel, horizontally, those who joined earlier are Abel, while vertically, those who joined recently are Abel. In the vertical and horizontal relationships, the horizontal must be attentive to the vertical and not the other way around. P.1047 right. Ch.3.Sec.9.2.

What is the secret in becoming an Abel figure? It is safeguarding the tradition. One who does not rebel even when facing death can become Abel. You have to understand this. Jesus is said to be the young lamb, right? Therefore, even if you are pierced, you must not rebel. P.1047 right. Ch.3.Sec.9.2.

What does Abel have to do? He has to restore three generations. First, Cain must be restored. Then, parents must be restored. Then God must be liberated. These are the three great missions. In other words, without liberating the satanic world, parents cannot appear. Without liberating the parents, God cannot be liberated. It is Abel's mission to be responsible for the three realms of liberation. P.1048 left. Ch.3.Sec.9.2.

Where does God decide upon the Abel figure? He makes the choice in a place where Satan cannot accuse. This is the position where unity with God is achieved, but this is not a position of joy, but the most sorrowful and difficult position. In other words, in the position where one is willing to die in the most miserable situation, you can become one with God. P.1048 right. Ch.3.Sec.9.2.

The one who pursues personal agendas first is Cain, and the one who thinks more about public matters and Heaven than about himself is Abel. P.1049 left. Ch.3.Sec.9.3.

Among the members of the Unification Church, what kind of person would be Cain? Those who raise their head high and order people around are all Cain. Then who is Abel? The person who strives to fulfill their responsibility is Abel. Originally, those who joined earlier are Cain-type, but they hold their head high and try to be the Abel figure. They are digging their own graves. No matter how hard they try, I will not use them if they do not live according to the rules and principles. P.1049 right. Ch.3.Sec.9.3.

Cain is someone who puts his concerns on others; Abel is one who takes on other people's concerns even while having his own. P.1049 right. Ch.3.Sec.9.3.

You should not treat people lightly. That is why until 1970, whenever someone who was hungry passed by the headquarters, I let them have a meal before they went on their way. It is our duty as human beings to give food to the hungry. Even when you are getting a meal for free, it would be right to share it with others. If someone with a plentiful supply of rice were to strike a hungry person who, passing by, had asked for something to eat, that household would not last for long. P.1050-51 Ch.3.Sec.10.1.

The work of resurrection does not occur in a course that is mandatory. It has to be exciting. You must stay up at night without even realizing it is night. You discover the value of heaven only when you get to the point at which you can say, "The place where I am now is heaven." Isn't that right? Even with trees, unless they are completely bonded, they don't engraft. P.1051 right. Ch.3.Sec.10.1.

I try to warmly treat those who come, even if we were to starve. If they have reached a certain level of spirituality, say one hundred, we will be struck and judged if we treat them any less. In those situations, you should treat such people two, three, five, even ten times greater than their level. You will not go to ruin by doing so. God will be deeply impressed saying, "This fellow is better than Heaven!" P.1051 right. Ch.3.Sec.10.1.

A dog will enter the yard of even the best of houses to relieve itself. If the homeowner complains, "Oh! You dirty little dog! Why are you coming round to our house to defecate in our yard?" then he is chasing away his blessings. Instead, he should say, "Come on in and relieve yourself." P.1051 right. Ch.3.Sec.10.1.

I am not saying we should not fight or argue. If both sides are going to benefit, then we should fight. We should not fight if one side would perish. We fight to educate and bring them to our side, not to make enemies. P.1051 bottom right. Ch.3.Sec.10.1.

In order to become good, you should not think that you have nothing to do with the evils of others. You should suffer for them, and pray throughout the night with tears for them, and live with the determination to offer a sacrifice of atonement for their sins. Such a person will surely become their central figure. P.1053 left. Ch.3.Sec.10.2.

You should love and respect the elderly more than you do the young people. It would be alright just to meet young people, but you should especially love and have sympathy for older people who cannot work and who are weak and need care. P.1053 right. Ch.3.Sec.10.2.

How are we going to maintain the pure lineage inherited from God? How can we preserve the pure lineage rather than the fallen lineage? We must sincerely care for the second generation. It is very difficult to become pure in this fallen world. The first human beings fell even though they were in the unstained Garden of Eden. In spite of their suffering, the blessed parents born in the fallen world should make an unstained environment for their blessed children. It is my desire to prepare such an environment as quickly as possible for the second generation, no matter what sacrifices that may entail. We have to hurry. P.1055 right. Ch.4.Sec.1.1.

You should not think, "Things will be better in the future even though it is terrible now." You are to be perfect now; the present is the problem. P.1056 left. Ch.4.Sec.1.1.

The reason for the destruction of the Israelites after they entered Canaan was that they were assimilated into the existing environment and became accustomed to its habits. P.1056 left. Ch.4.Sec.1.1.

Chronic habits are deep-seated evil habits. After your marriage, if you lead a habitual life while rearing your children, habits become part of your body. You no longer find time for prayer or special offerings in such an environment; there is no time for prayer when the children are making noise right beside you. P.1056 right. Ch.4.Sec.1.1.

When the parents make serious efforts not to deviate from the heavenly way, the children will never be disobedient. P.1057 right. Ch.4.Sec.1.2.

The family should be restored. There is no greater act of witnessing than this. P.1057 bottom right. Ch.4.Sec.1.2.

Think about it. How many people come before Sunday Service and help prepare for it? Many are just arriving when the sermon is about to begin, after the singing of the holy songs. How can we call such people followers of God's will? No matter how well they make excuses, they are living a private-minded life, not a public-minded one. There is nothing we can hope for or expect from such people. Therefore, you should seek a fresh understanding of God's will and go forth with the resolution to be conscientious in public life and to be a good example in private life. P.1058 bottom left. Ch.4.Sec.2.1.

All Blessed Families, without exception, should arrive before the church service starts and create an atmosphere of grace for the many types of people who will attend, so that they may experience grace. If you create a foundation of heart to support the minister before he comes up to give the sermon, the speaker will be stimulated by the fervent expressions on the members' faces. The number of such members determines the development of the church. P.1058 right. Ch.4.Sec.2.1.

You should consider public anniversaries and events of our church as part of your very own life and mobilize yourself. Families who do not do this are failures as Blessed Families. P.1058 right. Ch.4.Sec.2.1.

Blessed families should teach their children how to offer the Sabbath day to God by showing them an exemplary life of offering devotion from the break of day in order to prepare for the service. But in reality they do whatever they want to do. They do not pray, offer devotions, study the Principle, or witness in the name of a life of living faith. If the Sunday Service starts at 10:30, they should leave for church at 9:30 or 10:00. Instead of doing this, they leave home late and rush into their seats in the middle of the service. Such a family will be accused. As parents, no matter how much they educate their children, it will not influence them at all. P.1058-9 Ch.4.Sec.2.1.

Sunday is the day to offer to the other members what you have planned and saved during the week that can bring them joy. On Sundays, you can share some specially prepared food and everyone should praise their spouses. P.1059 left. Ch.4.Sec.2.1.

Wherever they visit, members should first go to the holy place, in other words, the holy ground or the church. If they cannot, they should at least set up a condition of having done so. Each of you is an individual; yet you should bear in mind that you are more than this. You should each stand in the position of a first ancestor. P.1059 right. Ch.4.Sec.2.1.

You must pray. In deciding the time to pray, you should try praying at daybreak, in the morning, at lunch, in the evening, and even at eleven or twelve at night. When you lead a life of prayer like that for many years, you should know which period of time is the best time for you to pray. Knowing this, you should offer devotion to God at the time that is right for you. If possible, you should pray with a person who has a high standard of grace. By doing so, you will receive grace through that person. P.1060 left. Ch.4.Sec.2.2.

Prayers are always fulfilled. Through prayer we receive energy and are shown the future prospects of how problems will unfold. P.1060 right. Ch.4.Sec.2.2.

Have you become children of God who can receive His support? If you wish to maintain this, you should always be with Him and become someone who allows God to be with you. A puppy that leaves the bosom of its mother and goes around on its own cannot enjoy its mother's protection. P.1061 left. Ch.4.Sec.2.2.

I proclaimed tribal messiahship at 2:30 pm on January 3, 1989. P.1062 bottom left. Ch.4.Sec.2.3.

Why do you have to fulfill the responsibility of tribal messiah? The first reason is that you must save your parents. Your parents are in the position of the first Adam, and you are in the position of the second Adam. You must complete the mission of Adam by restoring and re-creating your parents. The second reason is that you need a hometown. By completing the responsibility of tribal messiah, you will be able to have your own hometown.

Ultimately, the reason for fulfilling your portion of responsibility as a tribal messiah is the perfection of Adam's family. In real terms, you have to educate your tribe. P.1062 right. Ch.4.Sec.2.3.

What kind of being is the God who created this universe and its laws? He is the one who stands in the representative position of having lived for the sake of others more than anyone else. This is God. Therefore, in order to meet Him, you have to live for the sake of others. Even though He is the great king of knowledge, He does not ask you to come to Him with knowledge. God is also the great king of power, yet He does not ask you to come with power. He is also the master and great king of authority, money, and material things, but His desire is not for people to gather these things. If you live for the sake of others, everything can come to you. P.1063 right. Ch.4.Sec.3.1.

The way to win over someone is not to try to win through conflict but to care for him first from the position of a parent. By doing so, you will be successful. If you care for him for three years, then he will certainly listen to you well. This is how the human mind works. He will open all the doors in his house, including the master bedroom, and welcome you with the words, "You can come to our house anytime." You have to understand that such selfless actions, aligned with the original universal principle, will move the original minds of people. P.1065 right. Ch.4.Sec.3.2.



Why do people like things of a higher level? They like high places because there they can connect to a variety of things. Why don't they like low places? It is because people become restricted in low places, far away from wider relationships. For human beings, the most precious person of all is the one who is trying to connect to higher ideals, perspectives and issues. From this we can realize that such a person is a precious person. P.1065 right. Ch.4.Sec.3.2.

The people of the world will come and visit Korea in search of exemplary families. You should have something to show and to say to them at that time. P.1066 right. Ch.4.Sec.4.1.

A father should be the best friend of friends. When a father appears, his son should jump up to be with his father, even abandoning his friends. A father should also be the teacher of teachers. Hence, a father is to be considered even better than the president, the best and second-best only to God. Children should think of their father as their best friend and teacher, whom they would never exchange for any other friends or teachers. Sons should be able to say, "I would rather abandon my loving wife than abandon my father." P.1066-7 Ch.4.Sec.4.1.

Parents' love toward their children does not just come from their everyday relationships with each other. It is a love that springs up from the very marrow of their bones. Parents have a loving mind for their children that can never be forgotten or cut off. Therefore, parents love their children as long as their life endures. When parents experience that their life is connected with their children, a loving heart toward their children naturally springs up. Parents cannot help loving their children, not just because of a conscious intention to love them because they are their own, but because of the life force that connects them to their children more deeply than that kind of awareness. P.1067 right. Ch.4.Sec.4.1.

The man should take responsibility for all the disputes that arise in a family. He should maintain the central position of authority in the family. P.1067 right. Ch.4.Sec.4.1.

I am not worried about leaving behind the name of the Unification Church but about how to leave behind people who have inherited the tradition of True Parents. That is why I have been continuously educating them about the importance of tradition. P.1067 right. Ch.4.Sec.4.2.

You should educate your children by teaching them to become like their parents. It is not shameful that you did not eat enough and that you wore terrible clothes while witnessing. That will become educational material for your descendants that cannot be exchanged for millions of dollars. P.1068 left. Ch.4.Sec.4.2.

Suffering is wonderful; therefore, you should set a tradition that will make all your descendants feel proud for many generations. P.1068 left. Ch.4.Sec.4.2.

Accordingly, even though your precious children born after your Blessing go through suffering, you should not align yourself with them but rather with the fortune of God, the world, and nation. P.1068 right. Ch.4.Sec.4.2.

After you marry, you cannot do whatever you like. Once you marry and have a family you must follow that family's destined path, even at the cost of your life. P.1069 left. Ch.4.Sec.5.1.

Beginning with the very first moment of love, you are one, not two anymore. Once you are a couple, you cannot behave individually but should mutually take responsibility for everything. P.1069 left. Ch.4.Sec.5.1.

A wife should not think that she fulfills her responsibility just by preparing a meal when her husband comes home from work. The most important thing is for her to sit at the dinner table and share intimate words of love. If she comforts her husband after a hard day's work with that love and the voice she affectionately whispered at their first meeting, his fatigue will be washed away and their love will deepen. P.1069 bottom left. Ch.4.Sec.5.1.

When a husband goes to bed right after work, snoring loudly without eating dinner and without saying anything, his snoring should be deafened by his wife's sobs convulsing deep from within her bosom. My wish is to see that kind of family. If I cannot find such a family, my suffering will have been in vain. The six thousand years of God's sacrifice will come to naught. You should be aware of this. P.1069 right. Ch.4.Sec.5.1.

You thought it would be great once you got a husband. However, there are bad times as well. You are not supposed to expect only good things. Can you bathe in the sun twenty-four hours a day? You need the night. Is it not a rule that the high is followed by the low? P.1070 left. Ch.4.Sec.5.1.

A small dose of comfort will immediately dispel a woman's anger. P.1070 left. Ch.4.Sec.5.1.

Couples should not engage in petty fights in which they accuse each other of not loving or recognizing one another. Even when you quarrel, you should do so for God's will. P.1070 bottom left. Ch.4.Sec.5.1.

In walking, men are to step forward with their right foot first and women are to step forward with their left foot first. Whenever they sit, it is a rule for men to sit on the east side and women on the west side. There is always a certain way to do everything, even for setting the table or for hanging up clothes. P.1071 left. Ch.4.Sec.5.2.

Men should look at women from top to bottom for the women's sake, and women should be looking bottom to top for the men's sake. Women should not look upstream at flowing water but should look downstream. A woman looking upstream is the type who will be unfaithful. Usually, women should prepare the place for men to sit. When using a dresser, men are to use the right and women the left. If men use the upper side, women should use the lower side. For example, the woman

should not place her skirt or underwear on the man's upper clothes. The woman's clothes should not be placed on top of the man's clothes. P.1071 left. Ch.4.Sec.5.2.

The wife of a leader should not nag her husband when he is about to leave for work in the morning. The feelings in his heart that arise due to his wife's nagging will be like waves; they will be very disturbing. His disturbed heart can affect the whole world. If women are going to nag, then they should nag at night, and then all the problems will be solved overnight. Men go out to battle in the morning. The wife of this kind of husband should wake up early and serve him well. P.1071 right. Ch.4.Sec.5.2.

Women should always be beautiful, even if it requires using makeup and perfume. A wife should not be emotionally indebted to her husband, and she should always concern herself with her husband's body and clothes. When a husband looks tired after returning home, she should prepare the water to wash his face and things to brush his teeth, and be able to wash his feet and comb his hair. A woman's smile is the flower of the family. In order to establish a harmonious family, the woman should be a first-class actress of both comedy and tragedy. She should completely captivate her husband all the time, whether he is joyful or sad. P.1071-2 Ch.4.Sec.5.2.

A woman should change her clothes at least once every three days. She should also wash her hair that often. She should always smile. A smile is a flower of the mind. Always keep your flowers in bloom and give off a sweet fragrance. A woman should test her partner's response to her hairstyle and makeup. If you cannot bring joy to your partner with your facial or external appearance, you should do so through your interests even if you have to mobilize all the arts, such as music. You may research women's physiology by looking at magazines or explain to him about literature after reading several books. Make your husband live like a child who is enfolded in your skirt. P.1072 left. Ch.4.Sec.5.2.

When Blessed Families embrace and love their babies, they should know clearly the purpose for which their children were born. They were born because of God. They were born in relationship to God. Even though you may share secrets with your precious husband or your precious wife, this relationship is not of your own design. You met along a public path, following a heavenly principle. God intervened to create your meeting. Because of such a connection, if you should feel misery, then God feels the same misery. P.1072 right. Ch.4.Sec.5.2.

Women should go the way of women in response to heavenly law. You should be able to die if your husband asks you to die with him. Even though you die, you will live together in the spirit world. There will be a way for liberation as long as you regard your husband's order as absolute and are obedient to his command. P.1072 right. Ch.4.Sec.5.2.

Especially, education in order to inherit the tradition cannot be taught in school. P.1073 left. Ch.4.Sec.6.1.

Blessed families should establish a family tradition and create a family code of conduct. You should also create a standard of education for children and rules of conduct for the family. If the parents have not done so, they will have nothing to say when they commit an error and their children press them hard. P.1073 left. Ch.4.Sec.6.1.

In order to educate children, parents should first practice accordingly. The parents should be a model of loyalty to God's will. They should stand in the position where the children regard them with such awe so that they would not utter a word against whatever the parents say. If not, the children will not follow them. P.1073 bottom left. Ch.4.Sec.6.1.

When teaching your children how to live, you should teach them about the path they should follow in order to become great people, instead of just telling them to be a certain way. P.1074 left. Ch.4.Sec.6.1.

In the future, as parents, you are to embrace your children and follow heavenly law. You should never shed tears in front of your children even if your living conditions become terribly difficult and you have to live in hardship. P.1074 right. Ch.4.Sec.6.1.

Faith education is more important than school education. My thought is focused on the heavenly will, but your thought is individualistic. Creative power develops within those who have faith and act. P.1074 right. Ch.4.Sec.6.2.

Children of Blessed Families should be raised to become people of character through education of heart. They should be raised to become the proud chosen people through education of the norm and contribute to the advancement of God's will by fully expressing, one hundred percent, their God-given talent through gifted educational programs. P.1074-5 Ch.4.Sec.6.2.

Why do you feel tired when you study? It is because you study for yourself. Instead, think that the survival of the thirty million people of Korea depends on the one page or one sentence that lies before you. Study with the mind-set that the addition of one word of vocabulary will save those thirty million people and that the loss of one word will doom the same number of people. Accordingly, with that seriousness offer even more devotion.

It is not because your memory is lacking. You never forget what happens in an extremely serious moment, do you? Study at the risk of your life. You can feel the beating of your heart when you are serious. In such serious moments, can you forget what you are determined to do? To be forgetful is just a question of degree. P.1075 left. Ch.4.Sec.6.2.

Even if parents cannot freely give children material benefits because of their difficult circumstances, they should serve children with a loving heart that seeps from their bone marrow. Then the children will be indebted to their parents. That is why most sons of filial piety come from poor families. Because their parents bequeathed such a tradition, the children endeavor not to be indebted to their parents. When they do so, the parents feel joy. P.1075 right. Ch.4.Sec.6.2.

The elder brother and elder sister represent the east and west; the younger brother and younger sister represent the north and south. P.1075 right. Ch.4.Sec.7.

If you stand in a position where you cannot fulfill your filial duty to True Parents, you should offer those things that you wanted to devote to them to the members instead. Then Heaven can accept this offering as something greater than your filial devotion to True Parents. Such a person will surely be blessed. P.1076 left. Ch.4.Sec.7.

The path to heaven is opened by loving the members in the same way that you love God. You are trying to follow me, yet, with that same heart, you should strive to go together with your siblings. In this respect, we can conclude that the one who teaches the highest, quickest, and best way to go to heaven is neither God nor me but your siblings. P.1076 left. Ch.4.Sec.7.

How do you establish a firm economic foundation? You should first be frugal. That is why I tell you to be frugal. But no matter how much I emphasize this, it is still not being done. Even in an environment where we can freely give and receive material things, we may be chased out if we cannot fulfill our responsibility. In such a case the Unification Church will have to go through a second course of tribulation. P.1078 left. Ch.4.Sec.8.1.

You should know how to be frugal in everything. You should save the maximum and then find out the minimum you can live with. If you invest yourself using the minimum for at least three months you will discover the real minimum you can live with. After you do so, let's see how it goes. P.1079 left. Ch.4.Sec.8.2.

Even your clothes must be hung in a principled way. You should put men's clothes on the right side and women's clothes on the left side of the closet. When you put your clothes in a drawer, you should put men's clothes on top and women's on the bottom. P.1080 right. Ch.4.Sec.9.1.

When you take off your clothes, you should take off your trousers first, and then put your jacket on top of the trousers. You should not take off your jacket first. You should know how to put your surroundings in order through such principled ways of living. Men's shoes should be put on the right side, women's shoes on the left. Even if you live in a small house with only one shoe rack with two shelves, you should put the men's shoes above and the women's below. P.1080 right. Ch.4.Sec.9.1.

When women put on clothes, what do you put on first? Do you put on your upper garments or lower garments first? It is a principle for woman to put on clothes beginning with the lower garment. It is a principle to dress beginning with the lower garment. Although it is okay for men to occasionally put on their jackets first, that is also the case for men. P.1081 left. Ch.4.Sec.9.1.

Women should not laugh loudly. Women are like flowers. When flowers bloom, they do so without making any noise. They do not suddenly come into bloom; they bloom quietly. Such women are beautiful, not the ones who laugh loudly. Western people laugh loudly. Men may laugh loudly, but women should not. They appear gauche. It is unattractive. Even if you are a woman from the West, you should not laugh loudly. P.1081 left. Ch.4.Sec.9.2.

For people whose lips are tightly closed when their eyes and nose are laughing, it means they are poor. If your nose does not move when you laugh, you will have few children and descendants. If your eyes don't laugh when you laugh, you are lacking in heart. You must smile brightly and have a full laugh. P.1081 right. Ch.4.Sec.9.2.

Men should comb their hair as carefully as women do. They should take care when deciding the best side for parting their hair, just as women do when applying cosmetics. In the West as well as the Orient, men part their hair on the left. It is Western-style to part your hair on the left. It is good to have more hair on the right half than on the left. P.1081-2 Ch.4.Sec.9.2.

There is a saying in the East that when a woman's voice goes beyond the wall, that house will perish. Men's voices are usually loud and go over walls. But women talk quietly. That is how it usually is. If a woman's voice goes beyond the wall, it goes against this principle. That is why you would perish if you lived with such a woman.

By listening to the voice of a woman, one will immediately know how that person will live; whether she will have a happy life or be miserable or be loved. P.1083 bottom left. Ch.4.Sec.9.9.

You may use words spontaneously, but if you make a mistake in choosing one word, its influence will last for one year. If you misuse one word for one second, you will be put in a situation where you will have to pay the price for one year. P.1083 right. Ch.4.Sec.9.9.

Words spoken out of love, even swear words or any other words, will only prosper and develop. Everything, including the universe, will rejoice over those words. P.1083 right. Ch.4.Sec.9.9.

There are many unusual winds blowing in the world nowadays. The Unification Church members must never be swayed by such trends. That kind of adolescence is not *Sa Choon Gi* (???), the "Time of thinking of spring" but *Sa Choon Gi* (???), the "Time of the death of spring." Which one would you choose, this one with the character for *Sa* meaning "Thinking," or that one with the character for *Sa* meaning "Death". P.1084 left. Ch.4.Sec.10.1.

As buds, you have not yet bloomed. Do not become wicked like those who write love letters and have illicit love relationships. You should blossom naturally. When God sees you, He should be able to exclaim, "Oh! You have blossomed purely and naturally. Since I can smell the fragrance, I can tell that you are a virgin." In this case, God feels so much hope. Does God want something pure or something damaged? What about you, then? Do you want something pure

or something damaged? Even fallen men want to have something pure. Would God not value that even more? P.1086 left. Ch.4.Sec.10.1.

That means that you are taught God's love. This is the Unification Church. This is why the Unification Church will become the center of all religions. P.1086 right. Ch.4.Sec.10.2.

The people on earth who can go to heaven are those who have lived their lives centered on their first love, giving up everything and risking their lives for the sake of their first love. Therefore, you must do well in your relationship with your first love. P.1087 left. Ch.4.Sec.10.2.

Holy salt was first made and used on March 16, 1960 (lunar calendar) on the occasion of True Parents' Holy Wedding. From that day on, families began to use holy salt to sanctify things used in their daily life and environment.

Holy salt is like yeast. As a rule, when you purchase things, you should sanctify them with holy salt, and when you come back home, you should also holy salt yourself at the door. P.1087 bottom left. Ch.4.Sec.11.1.

What is holy salted should not be given back to the satanic world. However, if you cannot avoid this, you should give it back with your left hand. P.1087 right. Ch.4.Sec.11.1.

When you visit a place, do you sprinkle holy salt before you sit down? If not, you should establish a condition in which you inwardly blow three times, "Whew, whew, whew" before taking your seat. P.1087 right. Ch.4.Sec.11.1.

We should do as Jesus instructed after his resurrection, which is to receive the Holy Spirit by blowing. It is the same as when God brought new life into being by blowing into the nostrils of Adam. From now on, you, standing as a substantial being of life, need to blow on things before you eat or drink them. Korean customs are amazing. When Koreans drink water, they first blow on it; before they sit, they first blow on the spot. God must have moved the natural conscience of these people so that this could be one of their customs. This did not take place by coincidence. P.1088 left. Ch.4.Sec.11.1.

The Shimjung Candle was created on January 5, 1961, and was given to Blessed Families. The Shimjung Candle symbolizes True Parents and is therefore used when one prays in order to comfort God's heart and to commit oneself to the fulfillment of God's will. P.1088 right. Ch.4.Sec.11.2.1.

Birth Candles originated at the time of Ye-jin nim's birth (True Parents' first daughter). After the 36 Couples started married life, True Father bequeathed one Birth Candle to each family. P.1088 right. Ch.4.Sec.11.2.2.

I pray in Your name and with Your glory that when this candle burns during a child's birth, it will sanctify the spiritual atmosphere and completely prevent Satan from approaching. P.1089 left. Ch.4.Sec.11.2.2.

We must be completely one with the realm of the unified heart centering on the Ae Cheon Candle. Then everything will be placed in order. (132-107, 1984.5.27)

Beloved God! The sign of victory indicating the designation of the Day of the Love of God (Ae Cheon II) has been represented by this undying candlelight. P.1089 bottom left. Ch.4.Sec.11.2.3.

The Unification Candle originated from the 120-day special prayer condition that True Mother and the True Children offered from September 5, 1995 to January 2, 1996. During this time they prayed every day at midnight with the Unification Candle.

True Father will have a speaking tour in America from September 5, and I have already spoken in Japan. Before I left the house, I gathered the children who were there and discussed this with them. "Father is going out to the front line to speak to America in order to draw humanity close to him again. Therefore, we should also offer devotion together." P.1089 right. Ch.4.Sec.11.2.4.

On the first day of each month, the husband and wife in each family should offer a full bow together at five o'clock in the morning, facing church headquarters. This should be done in a joyful atmosphere. You should also do this at five o'clock in the morning on Sundays. You should report about everything in your daily life during the week. Sunday should be a joyful day that you long to have come quickly. P.1090 right. Ch.4. Sec. 12.1.

Pledge service should not be done only on Sunday mornings. Basically, we should do it every day. When you rise in the morning, you should first do Pledge service facing headquarters. It is an official ceremony. However, if we do Pledge service like that every day, there can be adverse effects. In order to avoid these side effects, as a condition, we do pledge only on Sunday mornings and on the mornings of the first day of each month. Ideally, we should be doing it every day. P.1090 right. Ch.4. Sec. 12.1.

You should stand in a straight line with God at least during morning Pledge service. It is a truly serious hour. You should repent if you are even one second late. You should also prepare some

candy as holy food, like you would for Holy Communion, and share it with your children. P.1090-91 Ch.4. Sec. 12.1.

You cannot expect your children to grow well when you do not even strictly observe morning Pledge service, devotion, and Sunday service. You should establish a four-position foundation centering upon True Parents. In order to raise good descendants, the parents should do well. P.1091 left. Ch.4. Sec. 12.1.

Whether or not you participate in church gatherings will become an issue; whether or not you fulfill your responsibility in church activities will become an issue; and whether or not you become a good example as a parent in front of your children in family life will become an issue. P.1091 left. Ch.4. Sec. 12.2.

Hoondokhwae should be done at least by the husband and wife of all Blessed Families. They should do it for an hour every morning. If they are unable to do it in the morning, they should do it in the evening before they sleep, even if it is twelve or one o'clock. P.1091 left. Ch.4. Sec. 12.3.

You should do hoondokhwae whenever you have time; when you are alone or even when you are in the restroom. You should make a record of how many hours you read and of where you read. You should keep a book in your pocket and always do hoondokhwae. P.1091 left. Ch.4. Sec. 12.3.

The important words in my speeches until this time are a record of the victories of my confrontations and battles against the satanic world. Therefore, you should read all of them. Since they contain all the details of the battles of the past and present they are True Parents' historical record. So in order for the Unification family to unite with True Parents, you should unite with these records and develop a deep relationship with these words. You, your family, and your tribe to the seventh generation should unite with this; horizontally the 160 and 180 families should be completely united to make the foundation to bring these words substantially down to the earth. The words I say are not my own. They are not my words but the words of God who has spoken through me. Wherever and whenever you hear these words, your heart will begin to move. When your heart is profoundly moved, a great revolutionary change will occur in your body. They have that kind of power. P.1092 left. Ch.4. Sec. 12.3.

You should study wherever you gather and whenever you have time, night or day. You should read it a hundred or even a thousand times until it becomes your own, and you become the substantial object to that book. From now on, you should practice such things.

Unification Church members will get sick if they just sit around. In order to avoid becoming ill, you should be diligent in reading, taking exams, and working hard. P.1092 right. Ch.4. Sec. 12.3.

A long time ago, when the families of loyal subjects received something good, they first offered it to the king of the nation. That was the rule of the life of loyalty in Korea. From that perspective, Korean courtesy reflects something central to heaven that cannot be found in any other nation. P.1093 left. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

You should ask your descendants to perform a sacrificial rite for you in the future. P.1093 left. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

What will you do in your hometown? First of all, you must devotedly take care of the graves of your ancestors. Because the Korean custom is to honor them, if you have not been able to fulfill your responsibility as the eldest son of the head family in your hometown, you should erect a headstone, plant trees in this desolate land that your grandfather loved, create an ideal environment on the hillside that your grandmother enjoyed, and clean up the village so that all the mountains and streams in your hometown can praise you. P.1093 right. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

If your grandparents are deceased, you should visit their graves. When you visit their graves, you should pay your respects to them as if God were buried in that grave. On that day, you should repent for not attending your grandparents during your lifetime. P.1094 left. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

Your ancestors come on the anniversary of the day that they passed away. Prepare an offering table and hold a memorial service for them then. If you do it in a room that has True Parents' picture, bowing to your ancestors would not be a sin. It is not a sin to prepare offering food and perform memorial services for your ancestors. P.1094 left. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

The Unification Church allows the honoring of ancestors. We should carry on that tradition. In the future, this will be done in the opposite way from the secular tradition; instead it will be centered on True Parents. P.1094 left. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

Is it all right for the Unification Church to offer ancestral rites? It is liberating for us! From now on, you will be allowed to perform ancestral rites. Formerly, God did not want us to hold ancestral rites. Korean laws on honoring ancestors are the heavenly law. Koreans are a unique race in the world. Only Korea is practicing this way. P.1094 right. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

On the day of the memorial service, the firstborn son of the eldest son decides the time of the service. P.1094 right. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

When you perform ancestral rites, you have the firstborn son of the eldest son stand at the head even before his uncle, cousin, third-cousin, and even his great-uncle. In reverence to the ancestors in traditional Korean culture, the firstborn son is at the front. Thus, we can see that it is a race that attaches importance to the right of the eldest son. P.1095 left. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

If you were pious toward your parents, you do not have to offer ceremonial rites for them after their death. You should just place their picture before you and commemorate that day as if your mother and father were alive. What boundary lines are there in the spirit world? Now instead of going to the burial ground, you can attend your parents in your house, as if they were alive, and you can feast and celebrate. Even though you do not go to their graves, it will still be a celebration. P.1095 left. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

There is some element of truth in Christianity's ban on the performance of ancestral rites up until the present day. This rite should be offered to God and the True Parent of all humankind. The ancestors in the spirit world should originally have

been served by us. However, due to the Fall, this has been prohibited until the present time. In the age of restoration, because you have received the Blessing, you should attend your ancestors from now on. P.1095 right. Ch.4. Sec. 13.1.

Giving birth produces perspiration in situations that border on life-and-death. Why was it made like that? Why? It is in order for us to experience a brilliantly shining love. P.1096 left. Ch.4. Sec. 14.1.

In such a state of near-death, when your eyeballs pop out, when everything is destroyed and heaven and earth are in chaos, then if a child cries its first cry and is born, your eyes open wide. All pain disappears in an instant. Since you gave birth with such difficulty, you can love more than the difficulty you have experienced. P.1096 left. Ch.4. Sec. 14.1.

You should hold a ceremony of dedication to heaven for daughters on the seventh day after their birth and on the eighth day for sons. P.1096 left. Ch.4. Sec. 14.1.

When a child is born from his parents' bosom, regardless of whether he is good-looking or not, the child takes after its parents. In the same way, Unification Church members are taught the way of the true parent. For you, that is the blessing of all blessings. P.1096 right. Ch.4. Sec. 14.2.

Without removing Original Sin, you cannot rise to the level of receiving the Blessing as true children. P.1097 left. Ch.4. Sec. 14.2.

The holy wine contains elements of all the things of creation, which cannot be accused by Satan. After drinking the holy wine and becoming one with True Parents, if you commit any acts that defile your body, you will be worse off than Satan himself. Satan defiled and violated the completion stage of the growing period, but if someone who has received the Blessing commits a sin, he defiles the substantial body of God in the perfection level of the completion stage and so cannot ever be forgiven. P.1097 left. Ch.4. Sec. 14.2.

I take complete and eternal responsibility for those who have received the Blessing, even in the spirit world. I will directly guide them and lead them. The Blessing establishes an eternal relationship between the True Parents and those who receive it. P.1097 right. Ch.4. Sec. 14.2.

I have enabled you to establish the indemnity condition to receive this new Blessing and create a new family and I have tried to take responsibility for your heavy burden. But if you transgress the heavenly law even after I carried out my responsibility, that constitutes the most fearful sin -- one that will be transmitted down to dozens of generations. P.1097 right. Ch.4. Sec. 14.2.

If human beings had not fallen, death would have been a happy occasion. That is why I have taught the Unification Church members that they should not greet death with sorrow. That is why it is called the Seunghwa. P.1098 left. Ch.4. Sec. 14.3.

The spirit of a dead person will lament if he sees people holding on to his dead body and crying. He would say, "The ignorance of these people is a rope that ties me down and prevents me from going on my way." Since we know these things, we call a funeral a Seunghwa Ceremony.

Seunghwa means a sacred ascension to heaven. You have to push the dead person to the spirit world with the power of love. Do not hold them back but push them forward. P.1098 left. Ch.4. Sec. 14.3.

The Seunghwa Ceremony began with Heung-jin. P.1098 right. Ch.4. Sec. 14.3.

In the satanic world, if you cry aloud, evil spirits will come to you, but evil spirits cannot find their way to a Seunghwa Ceremony. P.1099 left. Ch.4. Sec. 14.3.

You should have a yearning heart for holy days. Only by establishing such a tradition can you build a life of tradition for your descendants. Holy days should be spent in joy while sharing everything with one another amid the joy of heaven. This day is based on the family and is a day for establishing the heavenly law. P.1099 right. Ch.4. Sec. 15.1.

A sacrificial offering represents the life and belief of the person making it. When you buy the goods for a sacrificial offering, do not try to get a discount but give a little bit more. You should do the same when you buy material to make your holy robe. P.1100 right. Ch.4. Sec. 15.2.

## **BOOK 8 – SIN AND RESTORATION THROUGH INDEMNITY**

God waits until we pass through adolescence, the realm of dominion based upon accomplishments through the Principle. God cannot interfere in the realm of immature love. What human beings need is absolute love. P.1107. right. Ch.1.Sec.1.1.

Where does the Kingdom of Heaven expand from? It does not expand just from the point of separating from Satan. It expands from the realm of the fulfillment of human responsibility. That is to say, through Adam and Eve having fulfilled their portion of responsibility, the realms of direct and indirect dominion and the love of the heavenly realm and the love of the earthly realm connect for the first time. P.1108. right. Ch.1.Sec.1.1.

When you are linked with the vertical love of God and are heading toward perfection, the realms of indirect and direct dominion are connected. Satan is not there. If the realms of indirect and direct dominion are connected, the realms of heart

are also connected, so Satan cannot be present. The problem is that the Fall took place before this occurred. P.1109. right. Ch.1.Sec.1.2.

While fulfilling their portion of responsibility, the love of God and Adam and Eve meet in the realms of both indirect and direct dominion. There the vertical love of God and the horizontal love of Adam and Eve are connected. P.1109. right. Ch.1.Sec.1.2.

To deny the Blessing after you have received it is to do worse than Satan. Satan will accuse you. This is the same as entering into the realm of direct dominion and then falling. P.1110. right. Ch.1.Sec.1.2.

The world of attendance is not the obscure place you might imagine. You have to feel Father and Mother directly in your daily life and with your spirit. If you feel deeply moved in your heart and you are bubbling over with joyful emotion and stimulation, you are already living in the Kingdom of Heaven. If you reach that state, on meeting someone you can immediately intuit whether he has good or bad character. You will discover that you have entered a realm of direct dominion of unimaginably high dimension. This is the Principle perspective. You should live in this way. P.1110-11. right. Ch.1.Sec.1.2.

The Principle has a character that is absolute. There is no leeway in the Principle. We must be prepared to go this way under any circumstances. We must go this way even though we may die. We must go even if it takes forever. If God were able to do as He pleased, He would not have needed to pass through the suffering course of the providence of restoration. However, as it has been set in that way, due to the boundaries of the human portion of responsibility, God also had to walk the path of numerous hardships to restore humankind. You must understand that responsibility does not lie solely with God. He is bearing the responsibility together with humanity. P.1113. right. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

In the course of restoration through indemnity God will not help you and neither will the church headquarters. You must do it alone. If you receive help, it would not be indemnity. Why is that? Since the principle of the human portion of responsibility exists, if you receive help, then according to that principle, indemnification would not occur. If help were possible when humankind fell, God would have interfered so that the Fall would not have taken place. He could not do this, because Adam and Eve's portion of responsibility did exist. He could not intervene because of the human portion of responsibility. P.1113-4. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

God loves me, but He cannot help me when I am walking the course of indemnity in the process of fulfilling the human portion of responsibility. I must go forward and overcome Satan on my own. Adam was originally given the realm of the ideal through which he should have taken dominion over Satan and the satanic world. I must surpass that realm. P.1114. left. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

Had there been no human portion of responsibility God could have exercised his dominion at any time. He could have said, "Hey, do not do that," at the time of the Fall. Because our portion of responsibility existed and God was not in a position to interfere, He could not prevent the Fall and neither could He prevent Satan's activities. P.1114. left. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

Had Adam and Eve consulted with God, there would have been no Fall. They should have asked the question, "The Archangel is doing such and such, so what shall we do?" Then God could have responded to them. The act of asking was their portion of responsibility. They were free to ask. However, they established a horizontal relationship without asking God. That was the problem. Because they acted without asking, a problem occurred. P.1114. bottom left. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

The purpose for which God gave each person responsibility is so that they can take part in the great task of creation. In creating human beings, God creates ninety-five percent and human beings make up the other five percent. This constitutes the condition that not only God, but that we too have participated in our creation. Having our portion of responsibility endows us with such equal value. We are given a great position. Only human beings have this portion of responsibility. Despite this fact, ever since the dawn of human history, not a single person has fulfilled his responsibility. We have not known about our portion of responsibility. P.1114. right. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

The path that True Father had to pioneer can be likened to an extremely treacherous mountain ascent. Do you think God held out His hands even once, saying, "Hey, this is dreadful!" Do you think he protected me night and day and welcomed me happily? He watched me, but stayed still. He never told me where I should go. He was unable to guide me. I had to fulfill my portion of responsibility. God intended to love perfected human beings with the love that human beings can have, not human beings who are still in the stage of seeking love. P.1115. right. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

If Adam and Eve had not fallen they would have harmonized with God, perfected themselves as His embodiments on earth and become the king and queen of love. They would have fulfilled the human portion of responsibility which connects the realms of direct and indirect dominion through God's love. Then, God would have resided in Adam's heart and the spirit of Adam would have become the body of God. P.1116. bottom left. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

Fallen humanity has failed more than just the human portion of responsibility. They have violated 97 percent of the whole creation. P.1117. right. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

Because Adam was unable to fulfill his portion of responsibility, numerous walls were created in the spiritual and physical worlds. What should be done about these walls? What could Eve have been doing about this? The course of women in human history has been miserable. They were torn apart here and trampled on there. Like broken gourds they had to roll around whether they were kicked or cracked. Even if they were kicked so hard that shoe imprints remained, they had to keep rolling forward. Even if they were kicked again where they went and had ten holes in their bodies, women had to just

keep rolling. Women have gone through a course in which they had to roll forward covered with bruises. Why? They had to restore Eve's position. P.1118. left. Ch.1.Sec.2.1.

However, until today, although God could move through 360 degrees on that same level plane, He could not teach us directly and we have been waiting for the emergence of a central figure. P.1118. right. Ch.1.Sec.3.1.

We must love God and humankind more than Satan hates them. Satan hates God and humankind, but we must be able to say, "We will love God more and we will love humankind more." P.1119. right. Ch.1.Sec.3.1.

The completion of God's providence of restoration cannot come about through simply mobilizing 40 million or 60 million Korean nationals, but must be accomplished through the required sacrificial offerings. This parallels the destiny of a nation that hangs in the balance over the cutting of a pigeon into two. P.1121. right. Ch.1.Sec.3.2.

Adam and Eve were to be the body of God. P.1123. left. Ch.1.Sec.3.2.

Do you think that restoration through indemnity is easy? The lineage must change back to how it should have been. You must be engrafted. You should be totally different people than those in the satanic world. Only when you forget the face of your mother and father can you be restored. P.1123. right. Ch.1.Sec.3.2.

"Portion of responsibility" is a term that is not used much in ordinary society. However, especially in the Unification Church, it is a term that is more important than any other. Within our church, if you do not know these two terms "Portion of responsibility" and "Restoration through indemnity" you will not be able to understand the content of our historical course or resolve the mistakes and unknown facts of history. That is how important these words are. P.1123-4. Ch.1.Sec.4.

We must bear in mind that what the Unification Church is today revealing -- that human beings have a portion of responsibility -- is a discovery of universal proportions. The invention of the atomic bomb or Einstein's Theory of Relativity cannot be compared with this discovery. That is because, unless we know this reality, then nothing in history can be resolved. The fact that all of you have come to know this truth is a tremendous thing. Yet, we have had an aversion to our portion of responsibility. We should like it more than anything else, but we actually dislike it the most. P.1124. right. Ch.1.Sec.4.

The existence of our portion of responsibility was my discovery, but do you think it happened by my just sitting down with all of you? I discovered it through struggle. If this truth were discovered and disseminated, the satanic world would totally collapse. So, Satan hid it, he covered it up under a huge mountain. P.1125. left. Ch.1.Sec.4.

The rules of the church are all aspects of our portion of responsibility. Thus, we must diligently keep the time for church service. We must arrive before the service begins, and must fully concentrate during its course. That is what I did. In the past, if I was going to be late for school I would skip a meal and thus arrive early. That is what I did. I had to learn to control the use of time. P.1126. left. Ch.1.Sec.5.1.

Fulfilling our portion of responsibility means to have absolute faith and absolute obedience. That is the only way. You should not insist on your own way. Eve fell because she insisted on her own way. I am saying that after you join the church you should not complain. P.1127. right. Ch.1.Sec.5.2.

Thus, for us to be re-created we must absolutely pass through a course of struggle. Who is controlling this course of re-creation? Satan is. Satan rules up to 97 percent of this realm; beyond the 97 percent, God is in control. P.1128. left. Ch.1.Sec.5.2.

You must go through that which Jacob indemnified, the indemnity of Jesus and the indemnity course of Moses, by walking the indemnity course of Rev. Moon of the Unification Church. P.1128. left. Ch.1.Sec.5.2.

Jacob knew that when the angel came, he came as a messenger from God. Thus, he asked, "Did you come with the mission to destroy me? Or did you come to give me a blessing?" The angel replied, "I came to bless you." So Jacob asked, "If you came to bless me, why are you withholding it from me?" The reply came, "I cannot just give it to you because your portion of responsibility remains." In other words, Jacob had to wrestle with him and win in order to receive the blessing. That is to say, the blessing could not be granted unless he fought with his life. When challenged by the angel, Jacob determined to be victorious and rose up saying, "I see. All right, even if I lose my fingers or even my arms, I will not lose." He then wrestled with the mind that he would not let go, even if he were struck by a sword, or had his head cut off. How long did they struggle? They struggled all through the night. He fought with the determination that he would not let go until he died. P.1128. right. Ch.1.Sec.5.2.

Do you think that you have fulfilled your portion of responsibility? Adam and Eve passed away without accomplishing this. As a result, none of you are in the position of having fulfilled it. No matter how wonderful you are, even if you are a president, or a nationally renowned scholar, you cannot rise to the position of having fulfilled your portion of responsibility. Satan has a firm grasp on you in the realm wherein your responsibility has not been fulfilled. To separate from Satan, indemnity must be paid. Without paying indemnity, without becoming an offering, he will not release you. Until indemnity is paid, he will never let go. P.1129. left. Ch.1.Sec.5.2.

If you look at the eighth chapter in the book of Romans, it says, "but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly, as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies." (Rom. 8:23) and "For you did not receive the spirit of bondage again to fear, but you received the Spirit of adoption by whom we cry out, 'Abba, Father...'" (Rom. 8:15) You can only become adopted children. The Christians are adopted children. Adopted children have a different lineage. If you look at the Gospel of John, Jesus said, "You are of your father the devil, and your will is to do your father's



Desires.” He said, “father”, so does not that mean that humankind's ancestor is the devil that their lineage comes from him? Therefore, what is circumcision? It is the separation of good and evil. That is how it is. What kind of fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil are you talking about? P.1131. left. Ch.2.Sec.1.1.

When Adam was chased out of Eden, was he expelled before or after having children? We did not see this, but if they had sons and daughters, would God have been able to chase them out? There would have been many more tears. The grandchildren would have clung to God and cried, “Grandfather, grandmother, why are you chasing us out like this?” and held on and screamed. If those four people had just grabbed God's arms and cried, He would have had to cut them off, wouldn't He? I do not know about sinful Adam and Eve, but their sinless children would have realized the fact that God could not chase them out. God understood this, so He expelled Adam and Eve before they had children. P.1132-3. Ch.2.Sec.1.1.

When a man enters into a spiritual state of deep prayer, a woman always appears to tempt him. Something like this inevitably occurs, blocking the religious path. Why does this happen? It is because the history was formed through illicit love. P.1134. left. Ch.2.Sec.1.1.

Then, why could God not intervene in this? Human love is governed by human beings. It is not the subject, but the partner who is the master of all forms of love in heaven and on earth; thus, if God, who lives for the sake of others following desires of His partners, came to dominate human love, the fundamentals would break down. So, God as a Ruler would stand in an absurd position. That is why, even though He saw what was happening, He could not do anything about it. P.1134. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.1.1.

Adam and Eve were still under age, so they did not understand this. They were mere children, so they did not know anything. Not understanding, how could they lament or struggle? P.1134. right. Ch.2.Sec.1.2.

Why does the devil hate God? Why does God hate the devil? According to Christian logic one must love his enemy. So, if Satan is God's enemy, why can God not love him? If He were to love the enemy of love, heaven and earth would disappear. The law governing everything would disappear. The law of existence would disappear. P.1138-9. Ch.2.Sec.2.1.

They covered their sexual parts, didn't they? Thus the evil seed was sown. Adam and Eve fell in their teenage years before reaching maturity. Since that was the starting point from which the historical lineage of the human world spread, this phenomenon is becoming widespread in the Last Days. All around the world, youths like Adam and Eve hide themselves in the shade and selfishly destroy the ethics of love, having no fear of heaven and earth. When such a time comes you must know that the era of Satan's full power has arrived on earth. At that time, you will witness the iron hammer of God. P.1139. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.2.1.

Due to the Fall we lost true parents, true husband and true children. Eve and the archangel caused this loss. From this viewpoint, women who live on this earth are dependent on their fathers, husbands and elder brothers who represent archangelic types. That is why women are miserable. The daughter of a wealthy family came to live with a manservant; that is, her children were born into the lineage of a servant. Thus, women could not receive the love of the original husband, father and brother. P.1140. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.2.2.

Restoration has taken six thousand biblical years because of the complications involving lineage; otherwise, the almighty God would have restored everything in a day. People contracted a chronic disease that affected their lineage, so if God had tried to remove this disease at once, they would have died. That is why it took Him six thousand years. P.1140. right. Ch.2.Sec.2.2.

Eve was to be the wife of God. This is so because Adam was supposed to become one with God, so he would become God, Himself. Satan violated God's wife. P.1141. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

Satan is the enemy of love. So, even though God loves His enemies, He has not told us to love Satan, the adulterer. Satan cannot be forgiven. God loves people who belong to Satan, but He cannot forgive Satan. This is the Principle, so you must know it. P.1141. top right. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

Satan is an adulterer who stole His love. Therefore, can he be forgiven? To forgive Satan means to ruin the whole world. P.1141. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

Your families, your father and mother, are bound to the fallen love of the satanic world. In fact, you were born into such families. That is why your lineage is different. It is the same as if a robber chased away your father, raped your mother and you were born as the corrupt offspring from this liaison. Finally, the human race became an adulterous tribe and society that is not even aware of God's existence. P.1142. top left. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

This ringleader is not only God's enemy; he is the enemy of humanity. Imagine that the prince and princess who had been living in the royal palace of the kingdom were captured by the enemy general and began to live as servants and multiplied the offspring of the world of servants. Our situation is the same. Although the human race should have developed under the royal authority of that prince and princess, fallen humankind is like a mob that has multiplied under the evil kingship of the devil. P.1142-3. Ch.2.Sec.3.1.

Thus, God sees relationships of adulterous love as the greatest enemy. God cannot settle down on earth due to the expansion of such love. P.1143. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.2.

What are Satan's claims? He would tell God, “You are God, but I became the devil. I admit that. I am the devil. But then, if I look at Your principles, I want to ask You: when You created the archangel and Adam and Eve, did you create the

archangel Lucifer based on the standard of eternal love or based on the standard of momentary, temporary love?" How should God respond to him? Would He say, "I created you based on the standard of temporary love." No doubt, God would have to say, "I created you based on the eternal standard." Then, if Satan asks, "Even though I have changed, isn't it true that You cannot change?" God would respond, "That's right." Satan would say, "Although I changed and acted destructively, isn't it true that You cannot do the same?" And God would answer him "That is true." That is how it is. This is the one thing Satan is holding on to. P.1144. left. Ch.2.Sec.3.2.

In this world, if no one knows about the reality of a person's crime, the criminal can act boldly wherever he goes, as if he has done nothing wrong. However, if even a small boy points out that he has witnessed the crime, the criminal must submit to that. Thus, in order to make the devil Satan surrender, we should clarify his identity, expose the nature of his crime, and initiate a movement to expel him from heaven and earth. P.1144. right. Ch.2.Sec.3.2.

Could the original sin appear through eating the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil? Even if a father ate the fruit and thus committed a sin, what kind of fruit was it that made thousands of generations of his descendants into sinners? It was a relationship that involved lineage. Once planted in the lineage, the root of sin continues eternally by the law of inheritance. This can only be possible through a relationship of love. Improper love is the cause of the Fall. P.1146. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.4.1.

Do you know what the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil was that caused the Fall of the first human ancestors? The fruit signifies the sexual organs of the man and the woman. If you use these organs well, your nation will prosper, but if you misuse them, it will perish. This is what this fruit is. It is true even for a king; if he uses this organ properly, his nation will prosper, but if he errs in using it, his nation will be destroyed. Because of this, families and societies are breaking down; because of this, everything is divided into hell and heaven. The fruit of evil has ripened where the fruit of goodness should have been. Isn't that the fruit of good and evil? Does everyone have the fruit of good and evil, or not? P.1147-8. Ch.2.Sec.4.2.

It is written in the Bible, "When you eat of it (of the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil), your eyes will be opened." (Gen. 3:5) What do the words "Eyes will be opened" mean? For a man it means to know a woman, and for a woman it means to know a man; it means nothing else than the knowledge of the opposite sex. P.1149. left. Ch.2.Sec.4.2.

From God's point of view, Satan is the adulterer. Eve is an adulteress and Satan is an adulterer. God has to consider such a wife, such a daughter, a pure woman, a pure daughter. Otherwise, He cannot restore her to her original state. That is the realm of heart God is in, but no one knows His miserable state of mind; no one except me. P.1151. right. Ch.2.Sec.5.1.

A man's beloved wife was taken away by his enemy and bore a child from that enemy, but then she must return to her original husband and he must welcome her and her child with the same pure heart he had had for her before their marriage. She is the enemy of love, the adulteress of love. That is exactly the situation of fallen Adam and Eve. The world of peace will not come about, however, unless God overcomes that ridge in the realm of heart. Only when that standard is established will Satan naturally surrender. P.1151. right. Ch.2.Sec.5.1.

The highest standard for Christianity and other religions is to love one's enemy. God also stands in this position according to the Principle. Therefore He cannot but love the devil, Satan. Even though Satan is the enemy of love, God must love this enemy more than He loved Adam and Eve before the Fall. Why? It is because when Eve returns to Him from the bosom of His enemy, bringing illegitimate sons and daughters with her, the Father must love them more than He loves the children He gave birth to. Otherwise there is no way for Eve to return to her original position. Do you understand what this means? P.1152. left. Ch.2.Sec.5.1.

I am saying that someone who has not experienced the heart of a man who let his beloved wife go to the bosom of his enemy and yet prayed for the happiness of that enemy cannot know the heart of God. P.1152. top right. Ch.2.Sec.5.1.

Eve abandoned God on the day prior to their wedding and went to His enemy. She became an adulteress; she lived with God's enemy and gave birth to the enemy's children. Yet God had to accept her again as if she were an original and untainted person. Considering the heart of God who had to do this, I reflected that I needed to make Mother into a great mother. Only by making Mother a mother greater than Eve could I remove the scar from God's heart that was wounded, mortified and grievous over Eve. The family of True Parents must do this. Do you understand what I mean? P.1152. right. Ch.2.Sec.5.1.

The devil is the adulterer and the enemy of love, but in the Last Days the person qualified to be the Messiah cannot liberate God without the resolve to sacrifice even his own bride for this purpose and hand her over to Satan. P.1152. bottom right. Ch.2.Sec.5.1.

To God, the devil is the adulterer of love. So far, God has been dealing with all the accusations the devil, the adulterer of love, has been making. God had to persevere in His heart until today in order to redeem the condition that would enable Him to say in front of all humankind that He loved the devil. Why is that so? Had the archangel not fallen, he would have remained an archangel, but could not have entered heaven without being loved by God. God and His sons and daughters enter heaven only after they are able to love the archangel. That is why Satan accuses them. He says, "I did become the devil, but Your principle of creation, the original principled standard remains intact. So isn't it the rule that You and Your children cannot go to heaven unless you and they love me?" When Satan says this, God has to say "Yes." Until now, Satan has been grasping God by His neck and accusing Him. P.1153. left. Ch.2.Sec.5.2.

Who is Satan? He is the adulterer of God's love. This malicious scoundrel destroyed the moral principles of heaven and still he is shamelessly holding onto humanity living on the earth. He is gnawing at people, stripping everything from them and abusing them. He says, "I will cram these scoundrels into a trash can in hell. If I leave them alone, they will return to God in an instant, because they have an original mind that leads them to Him." When the spring comes, even withered tree branches start budding in the morning spring sunlight. In the same way, if you only give freedom to a person's heart, his original mind will naturally turn to God. That is why Satan is so harsh, trying to throw people into hell. Yet they do not know about it. P.1153. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.5.2.

Who will be judged in the great judgment? It is not human beings, but Satan, who dwells like a master in their souls, who will be judged. P.1154. left. Ch.2.Sec.5.2.

We must have a heart that is able to give the person we love most to such an adulterer and still bless him. You cannot love the enemy merely by forgiving him. Will Satan thank you just for forgiving him? We must have such a heart that we are able to bless our enemy even after giving him our only beloved. P.1154. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.5.2.

When Adam and Eve were about to eat the fruit of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, do you think God said, "It is just what I expected. Go ahead!" Certainly not! His heart withered and all senses focused on that place. God was trembling and bleeding. He felt like crying out "You must not eat the fruit!" Because of such indescribable sorrow and frustration, He was unable to think of anything else. That must have been God's situation. Do you think God simply watched Adam and Eve eat the fruit of good and evil? If He had had a sword He would have wanted to cut out that history, cut out the whole world, but His position did not allow Him to do that. All He could do was be overwhelmed with grief. P.1154. bottom right. Ch.2.Sec.5.2.

There is no way to forgive the adulterer of love. Others can be forgiven, but Satan cannot. If he is forgiven, the heavenly law will break down. P.1155. bottom left. Ch.2.Sec.5.2.

Why can't we cut Satan away at once? Why can the almighty God not do it immediately? It is because this problem has to do with lineage. If God tried to remove this lineage all at once, He would have to exterminate the entire human race. If the blood we inherited from Satan were to be extracted, human beings would disappear. Even Adam and Eve would disappear. Humankind would have to be totally crushed. Why could God not eliminate Adam and Eve and create new ones? He is not supposed to create people anew. Love is the alpha and the omega, the beginning and the end. This became the ideal standard. God therefore cannot strike human beings as the object partners of that love. You must understand this. P.1155. right. Ch.2.Sec.5.2.

How did Satan manage to oppose God for six thousand years? Until now, Satan has been holding the Principle in front of God. Satan says, "God, can You punish me? If You want to punish me You must destroy heaven and earth first. When You created me, didn't You intend to love me with the love belonging to the completion level, even though it would be only a love meant for an archangel?" Even the archangel must receive love that belongs to the completion level, even though it is the type of love befitting the archangel. So, the archangel would ask God, "When did You love me at the completion level?" Even God gets trapped at this point.

Did God love the archangel at the completion level? No, He was not able to. Only after God has loved the archangel in the Garden of Eden, in the free heaven and earth, with the love belonging to the completion level, is God's responsibility fulfilled. Otherwise, God is trapped and He cannot move. P.1155-6. Ch.2.Sec.5.2.

The change of lineage is possible only when you fulfill a forty-day period of fasting and prayer or experience a state of death in which you are vomiting blood. P.1159. left. Ch.2.Sec.6.1.

The value of the Jesus' precious blood and the ceremony of the Eucharist are symbolic and figurative expressions of the dispensation aiming to make people God's children through the change of lineage. P.1159. right. Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

When you receive the Blessing in the Unification Church, there are ceremonies for the change of lineage. You went through these ceremonies, didn't you? The indemnity stick, the three-day ceremony. How complex they are! Satan cannot intervene in these ceremonies. P.1159-60. Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

The making of holy wine requires twenty-one processes of sanctification. You do not know about this, do you? Preparation of the holy wine requires elements that bear fruit in the air, on the earth, and underground; as well as the most precious things from the world of minerals, plants and animals. All in all, twenty-one sanctified elements are needed in order to go through this process. All these things must not have any conditions for accusation. These things must be left untouched for seven months without something bad happening to them during that time. You have drunk this holy wine, but it was not produced easily. P.1160. left. Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

Adam and Eve fell when they were still immature, but God nevertheless expelled them from the Garden of Eden. If a person commits such a sin after he is placed on the level of perfection of heart, there is nothing that can be said. God does not even want to see the backs of such people. I feel the same way. P.1161. left. Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

You must inherit God's love, life and lineage. Thus, when you received the Blessing, you went through the ceremony to change the lineage, didn't you? You must believe in this more than in your own life. Do not think of it as just another ritual of the Unification Church or just another religious ceremony. This ceremony is like the injection of medicine that revives a dead person. It is a detoxifying injection. P.1162. right. Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

Only Christianity has acknowledged the importance of lineage, and considered the purification of lineage to be part of its core teaching. Therefore we can conclude that since other religions do not have such a history, they should follow

Christianity. So I could not ignore Christianity if I take into account the issue of the change of lineage. I could not ignore Christianity, as it inherited the ideology of the chosen people. If I were advocating that all religions were the same, why would I have received persecution? Do you understand what I am talking about? This teaching is the core ideology. You must clearly understand this. P.1163. Ch.2.Sec.6.2.

Since Eve fell by denying the father and son, Adam was lost. In order to indemnify and restore what had occurred, God raised up Rebecca. Rebecca had to take God's blessing from the father, Isaac, who represented God, and their son, Esau, who stood in place of Adam, without their knowledge. To reverse what had already occurred, Rebecca came to offer the condition, through Jacob, of restoring the birthright of the eldest son. P.1164. top right. Ch.3.Sec.1.1.

Since an archangel had tempted Eve, in the process of restoration the Eve figure has to tempt the archangelic figure to fulfill God's purpose. Restoration through indemnity has to be carried out in this way. That is why Tamar had a relationship with her father-in-law. P.1164. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.1.

Don't Mary and Eve resemble each other? In the same way that Eve deceived her future husband, and elder brother, Adam, and God, her Father, Tamar also followed the same pattern. The deception of their future husbands, father-in-laws, husbands, brothers and all siblings, was in each case the indemnity that corresponded to Eve's actions. The actions of Eve, Tamar and Mary closely resemble each other. P.1165. top left. Ch.3.Sec.1.1.

In the first chapter of the Gospel of Matthew, four great women appear. There appear Bathsheba and Tamar. Next, the harlot Rahab appears and then Ruth. Four great women who had illicit relationships. They all seemed to be women of loose morals. They had husbands, but they also had relationships with other men. Were they not, then, loose women? You should read the Bible very well, at least once. Jesus could not be born to a lawful wife. P.1165. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.1.1.

The Bible is a sacred scripture, but it contains many things that are difficult to accept. Isn't that so? How could it be that Jacob and Rebecca united to deceive his brother Esau and his father Isaac, in order to receive the blessing? Why did Tamar have a relationship with her father-in-law, and bear Perez and Zerah? Why could the blessing come to the tribe of Judah, under Perez and Zerah? The question is why are there issues that cannot be accepted from a human moral viewpoint?

In the first chapter of the Gospel of Matthew, four great women who had illicit relationships: Tamar, Bathsheba, Rahab and Ruth, are listed in the genealogy of Jesus. This gospel is the equivalent of Genesis, but the question is, why do the first pages of the New Testament focus on these women, who are stained and impure? Without understanding the Principle view of the Fall, there is no way to understand this. It has remained a mystery. By searching throughout my life, however, I have been able to answer these questions for the first time. P.1165. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.1.

In the cases of both Cain and Abel, and Esau and Jacob, the brothers were supposed to exchange positions after their birth. To achieve this, the cooperation between mother and child was always necessary. Eve protected Abel. In the case of Esau and Jacob, Rebecca was on Jacob's side, and helped him through her acts of deception. Nevertheless, no one knows why God still granted the blessing to them. Jacob was born as a twin and later restored the position of the right of the eldest son. Yet this still didn't restore the lineage. Then at the time of the birth of Perez and Zerah, when they were about to emerge from Tamar's womb, they fought each other and switched positions. The second child pushed aside the first child in order to be born first. You should understand the deep significance of these actions that signify moving closer to the lineal standard of the original parents. P.1165-6. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

Even though his thighbone was broken, he did not let go of the angel all through the night. What does that signify? The thighbone has to be struck. Adultery was committed using the thighbone in a wrongful way, wasn't it? Thus, the Unification Church holds the indemnity stick ceremony after the Blessing. What is that ceremony for? Where do you strike? The lower part of the body is hit. Wasn't that the area that was misused? Why would I suggest such a thing? We have no choice in this matter. P.1166. top right. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

Tamar was a person who recognized the importance of God's lineage, that is, the blessing. She was a historic, representative woman who was prepared to risk anything to pass on this lineage. Her position was the same as the position of Eve. Although Eve should have inherited God's lineage directly from Him as the mother of humankind, she in fact neglected and destroyed this inheritance. In order to restore this, a woman who would surpass Eve had to appear. A woman who could single-mindedly think that continuing the lineage that is blessed by God is more precious than her own life had to appear. Tamar was that woman. P.1167. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

In these providential circumstances, Satan could not say to a son whose position had been switched within the womb and then born first, "You're my son!" P.1168. left. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

That is why they were twins. Perez and Zerah were the two sons to be born from Tamar's womb, but when the first son tried to come out and stuck his hand out, a red string was tied around it. This signifies that, at the time of the Second Coming of the Lord, a dictator who represents all the power of the communist world will appear first. Thus, during World War II, a dictator like Hitler appeared and, in the USSR, Stalin appeared. Stalin died in 1953. China and the Soviet Union parted ways from that time on. He died three years after I was freed from prison in North Korea. None of this history is a coincidence. P.1168-9. Ch.3.Sec.1.2.

Tamar bore a son after having relationships with several men. This was not the ideal. Thus, the son represented an adopted son. Therefore, a woman who had inherited the faith and determination of Tamar but who could receive God's calling as a virgin, with devotion, was needed. A virgin with these qualities was needed. This was Mary. P.1169. left. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

All women should be prepared to risk their lives for the providence. P.1169-70. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

Because human beings inherited the blood of the archangel, Jesus was conceived through a person who stood in the position of the archangel. P.1170. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

If a person in the position of the archangel can be raised up, and can become an absolutely unchanging, loyal subject on God's side, especially loved by Him, then Satan will have to immediately leave his position as the archangel. Thus, Jesus was born through a person in the archangelic position on God's side. In this way, Jesus was born as the firstborn son. The right of the fallen eldest son was restored and purified into the new lineage, and Jesus was born with the right of the eldest son on God's side. Therefore, those who believe in Jesus are reborn through the love of God, with God as their center. Through this, their lineage is different from Satan's. P.1170. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

When they were engaged, Joseph and Mary were in the same position as Adam and Eve in their engagement period. Thus, God had to take Mary away from her relationship as Joseph's fiancée. This was to restore the loss of Eve. Then, whose position would Joseph be in? He would be in the position of the archangel. Joseph should originally have been in the position of Adam. Yet, how was it that Joseph was in the archangel's position? As he was descended from the Fall, his seed, the root, was different from Adam's. Joseph was carrying the fallen seed. P.1170. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

Children of the direct lineage of God will only appear if, in the fallen world, a person in a position similar to Adam can mature and become a representative of the archangelic position on God's side, inherit the seed of the archangel on God's side and rise to the ideal of the original seed. Therefore, we can ask who the father of Jesus was. The father was not Joseph. It was someone in the realm of the archangel on God's side, not the realm of the fallen archangel. However, God Himself could not have come down to create a baby. Satan is the archangel, isn't he? It must have been someone on the level of the archangel, but greater than the fallen archangel, who could be a loyal subject on heaven's side. Satan could not accuse a person in this position. The one who comes with the authority of God's son in the realm of the heart, and whom Satan cannot accuse, is the Messiah. It is very complicated. This is the way a firstborn son who could receive the first love of God was born for the first time on earth. P.1170-1. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

Since Jesus' conception took place based on the completed restoration of the right of the eldest son, from the time of his conception Satan could not claim him as his own. At the time of Tamar, Perez could not claim to be the firstborn son on God's side while he was in the womb, but only after his birth. P.1171. bottom right. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

The Blessing of marriage is not just the coming together of two people, a man and woman. Jesus had to stand on the foundation of the unified Cain Abel relationship between the two families and tribes of Zechariah and Joseph. This was the basis needed for Jesus' marriage. However, he died and was unable to accomplish this. The Blessing is to indemnify and restore this. Jesus and Joseph's family signifies the position of Abel. Zechariah's family signifies the position of Cain. P.1172. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

The relationship between Jesus and John the Baptist was similar to that between Cain and Abel. Jesus and John the Baptist were brothers. This has not been revealed before, but they were brothers. John the Baptist was born from the first wife, and Jesus was born from the second wife. He could not have been born from the first wife. That is why in the Last Days, sexual immorality has become prevalent. The trend of women selling their bodies is spreading. Women must be liberated. It cannot be done through the first husband. In the Last Days, outstanding people can be born to wanton women, to streetwalkers. Do you understand?

In the fallen world, the concubine snatches love. This is the age when the kept mistress can have even greater power than the legal wife. Why is that so? The first relationship represents Cain's love, and the second represents love from God's side, so God works through the second figure. That is why, for example, Joseph and Jesus were born from second wives. P.1172. right. Ch.3.Sec.1.3.

For whom was the foundation made? It was not made for me, but for the sake of humankind. This foundation should not remain as a possession of the Unification Church. It is for the sake of humanity. The Unification Church must disappear in the future. All people must come under one sovereignty. P.1173. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

What began with Jacob, the pioneer of the victorious realm of Israel, and continued through the history of Christian culture, created a foundation that took 4,000 years to build; yet it ended in failure. As I had to restore this all within my lifetime, and since I could not spend 400 years on it I had to reverse and restore everything through indemnity within 40 years, no matter how much humiliation I had to endure. That was the forty-year wilderness course. P.1173. right. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

Satan should have retreated completely, immediately after World War II, when he was feeling the greatest threat; however, as everything stood in the position of being on Satan's side, Heaven retreated completely. Thus, Satan ruled the world overall and began to vilify the Unification Church, which stood on God's side. P.1176. right. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

Once all vertical indemnity conditions required by the satanic world are set, there is no remaining condition for Satan to attack you no matter how much he wants to. Thus, I have brought about restoration through indemnity starting in the position of being treated as a servant of servants, then as a servant, adopted child, and child by a concubine. Next, the direct son has to be restored, then the mother, followed by Adam. It is only after the conditions are set that enable man and woman to say that they have risen to the highest position as a man and the highest position as a woman, can they rise to the position of parents. They cannot just go up automatically. Concrete internal indemnity conditions must be made. P.1176-7. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

I have confronted Satan in hundreds and even thousands of life-and-death situations. I have never compromised the standard I set, even when unspeakably difficult circumstances surged against me repeatedly like waves. Even if my legs

break, or an eyeball comes out, or my head falls off, I will not depart from the standard of heart I resolved to maintain at the outset. Thus, as long as I do not die, I will win. P.1177. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

Throughout my life, I have fought with my life on the line. In the ordinary world, people can avoid pain and suffering, but I cannot. It is not something I can overcome with just physical power or by force of arms. Unless I follow the heavenly principles and laws, I cannot avoid the arrows that come from all directions. Such a battle might be even more difficult than when God created heaven and earth. You cannot, even in your dreams, imagine how I have paid indemnity in this way and built up an internal foundation. The fact that I achieved a transition point based on such a foundation can be called a cosmic victory. P.1177. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

One spiritualist wept profusely after praying about whether I was genuine or a fake. He began crying bitterly without knowing why. He cried for one day, two days, every day. Why was that? In order to know me, you must experience this kind of agonized heart. Without this, you cannot understand me. Should someone say one word about me, I will burst into tears with one thousand years of grief in my bosom; but who knows such circumstances as mine? P.1177. bottom right. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

What does the savior come to do? He does not come for the sake of politics. Some Christians say that when the Lord comes, the Christians will be lifted up into the air, and those left on earth will all perish. But that is not so. It is not like that. They say he will come to judge, but the savior is not someone who comes to judge. He is the son of God, and, at the same time, he comes as the parent of humankind. Will someone who comes as the parent of humanity, with the heart of the parents, look at a sick son or daughter, groaning on the brink of death, and abandon them, saying, "You go to hell!" Even if parents in this fallen world see the miserable scene of their own child being about to die, they would cry themselves hoarse and want to do anything to save their child's life, even at the cost of their own. That is how parents are, so how much more would the savior, who has the original parent's heart be determined to do? He cannot think of such a thing as judging people. P.1178. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

What do you think? If God and I were to meet, would we meet laughing, or would we be crying? Try to think about it. I think I would faint. I wish I could shed tears, but I don't have the face to do that. I wish I could die but I don't have the face to do that either; that is why I would just faint. I am embarrassed. Even though I've done my best for forty years, there is nothing I can be proud of. I am just ashamed. That is how I feel. P.1178. right. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

There is something interesting about my name. If you write the Chinese character for "Moon" quickly, it looks like the character for father. The character for "Sun" consists of elements meaning "fish" and "lamb". In this way, the sea and the land are united centered on the father. Next, the character for "Myung" consists of the elements "Sun" and "Moon". The one who unites the land and sea, who teaches the unified truth bringing Cain and Abel together as one, and who brings the sun and moon together as one is God. God is the king of wisdom and, at the same time, He is the Parent. P.1179. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.1.

If, immediately after World War II, I could have stood on the victorious foundation of Christianity and the United States based on the Christian cultural sphere, would I have undergone hardships? If they had accepted me in those days, then who would have been Mother? If Sung-jin's mother had been unable to take that position, who would have replaced her? It would have been a British woman. As seen from God's will, it would have been a woman from Great Britain. The British royal family would have made a connection with me. P.1179. right. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

In order to restore Eve, the number has to be restored through indemnity. Mother was designated to her position in 1960 and had to go through the seven-year course until 1968 when God's Day was established; for her, that was a period of persecution. In this period, women of the Unification Church engaged themselves in all kinds of intrigues and slander against her. Mother did not understand the reason for this, so she could overcome everything only if she obeyed my words absolutely. So I told her, "Do this and do that, just as I say!" Thus, after the Holy Wedding I drove her away from my house for three years, and only after three years, did she stay in the same room with me. P.1179-80. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

I have established Parents' Day, Children's Day, Day of All Things and God's Day. Having gone through the seven-year course in the 1960s, I was able to establish God's Day in 1968 based on the realm of unified heart. Mother also had to go through a seven-year course from the completion level of the growth stage to the completion level of the completion stage. Without doing so, she could not have stood in the same realm of heart as me. Thus, although I married in 1960, it was only after seven years that I established God's Day, on January 1, 1968. This is according to the Principle. P.1180. left. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

It was fourteen years after the liberation of Korea that I received Mother. It was in 1960. Why was it fourteen years? It was because our first ancestors fell at the completion level of the growth stage when they were still passing through their second seven-year course; they fell in the very end of this seven-year course, before the beginning of the third seven-year course. Therefore, according to the principle of restoration through indemnity, I settled in Korea through a course of fourteen years of persecution, built the altar called the Unification Church, and chose Mother and raised her to this position while battling the established churches and the nation of South Korea. From that point, when Mother was chosen and designated to her position, God's providence could settle on earth for the first time. P.1180. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

Mother had to be less than 20 years of age. Why was that? It was because Adam and Eve fell when they were teenagers; they were younger than 20 years old. P.1180. right. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

As Eve was created through Adam, Mother had to come from a position where she did not know anything. She was not supposed to have many relatives. It wouldn't work if she had three generations trailing along with her. She could not have had any vertical relationships within her family. She could not have come from an ordinary kind of family. In fact, True Mother satisfies this criterion, isn't that so? She had no elder brother or father. There were just the two of them, mother

and daughter. Her mother was a representative figure among Koreans when it came to offering devotions for the Second Coming of the Lord. Such were the followers of the "Inside the Belly" Church, who believed that the Lord would come in the flesh. After I came to know Mother, she received the blessing of the women elders who represented the history of Korea in the providence, and who had fulfilled every responsibility related to Eve. P.1181. right. Ch.3.Sec.2.2.

We must progress from the beggar and the servant of servants. We must progress vertically, from the servant of servants, through servant, adopted child, child by a concubine, child of the direct lineage, the mother, the father, and then God; eight stages in this way. Also, the individual, family, tribe, people, nation, world, heaven and earth, and God are eight levels as well. Thus, it is vertically eight stages and horizontally eight stages. P.1182. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.1.

In other words, Satan is saying that although he fell, if God could not love him, He would not be able to return all the creation, which is in Satan's possession, to the realm under the dominion of God's love, and the love of Adam in the original Eden. He means that if God and Abel united and loved Satan, they can restore everything based on the condition of individual love, but otherwise, they will not be able to do this. Next, the same applies to the family, tribe, people, nation and world, which are in the same position, and he claims that heaven and earth are in such a position as well. That is the way in which Satan grabs us by the throat. P.1182. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

It is the heavenly principle that unless we pass through the place of tears with joy, the foothold of the heavenly kingdom will not remain in this earthly world. P.1183. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

Restoration through indemnity will not be accomplished if there is even one element of self-affirmation remaining. Indemnity conditions are set from a position of absolute denial. P.1183. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

You might be thinking, "Those eight stages were just thought up by Rev. Moon. I have no need for indemnity," but that is totally wrong. The human portion of responsibility is a fact, and there exists a formula course springing from our portion of responsibility. If there had been no Fall, we would have been able to pass this course naturally in 21 years, but now because there are walls blocking our way, we must deal with them one by one. Because of Satan we cannot go through all stages at once. We have to deal with them one by one and restore them. Because of the Fall, Satan appeared, and indemnity conditions appeared. Because we must fulfill our human portion of responsibility, indemnity conditions are an unavoidable process. P.1183. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

Because of Satan, indemnity conditions are necessary; if Satan did not exist, indemnity conditions would not be required. P.1184. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

After I learned about the law of indemnity in this world, in heaven and earth, I focused on the love for an individual, then on the love for a family, then on the love for a tribe, people and nation. At each stage, Satan tried everything imaginable to try to crush this love. That is why religion goes the way of persecution. It has had to shed tears and blood. We cannot go up to high and comfortable places. We have to stay in the uncomfortable places. That is our safety zone. Satan is arrogant, so he dislikes difficult places. That is why the most miserable place is the safety zone. P.1184. bottom left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

Can you successfully go through the indemnity course on the tribal level without having brought victory on the family level? There is no way for this to happen. Similarly, can you consider going to the level of the people without having dealt with your tribe? This also applies to the levels of the nation, the world, and heaven and earth. This must be very clear in your mind. P.1185. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

Thus, different religions of the world are in the positions of the servant of servants, servant, adopted child, child by a concubine, child of the direct lineage, mother, father, and true parents. At the very highest level, the religion in the position of parents will appear. In the Last Days, there will appear the religion of True Parents centered on the True Parents. After its emergence the Unification Church started teaching about the unification of religions. Such unification is only possible through the doctrine of a religion that teaches about the True Parents. P.1185-6. Ch.3.Sec.3.2.

Since the vertical and horizontal indemnity, the indemnity of the eight stages was completed, last year, on August 31, 1989, I went to Alaska, the northernmost place in the western world, and conducted the "Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages." It was conducted at the northernmost place. Then on September 1, I announced the "Ideology centered on the Heavenly Father." P.1186. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Do you know what the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages is? What is it? It represents the completion of vertical and horizontal indemnification. In order to go through the vertical stages, I began as the servant of servants. Horizontally, this had to expand from the individual to the family, tribe, people, nation and world. P.1186. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

I have already declared the "Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages," on the national, world and cosmic levels, thus commencing the age when God can come and go vertically whenever He wishes, and can freely move horizontally to any place on earth. That is why the term "Global village" has appeared. The Unification Church teaches not only about global village, but also about a global family. P.1186. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

On August 31, 1989, in Alaska I declared the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages that allowed humankind to shift into the age when indemnity is no longer needed. This means that wherever I or the believers of the Unification Church go, the age of persecution is over. From now on, if we build the Kingdom of Heaven or do anything we want, no one can accuse us. P.1186-7. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Until the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages was completed, it was still the age of the restoration of the right of the eldest son. Restoring the right of the eldest son! Finally, the right of the eldest son has been completely restored.

Now, that the right of the eldest son has been completely restored to God's side, we ascend and stand in the highest global realm, where Satan cannot oppose us. The time has now come when, if we push forward strongly and boldly, America, the communist world, Korea and Japan will all yield. That is why we should be strong and bold. P.1187. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

The Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages signifies that the historical course of vertical indemnity and the course of horizontal indemnity that went through the stages of individual, family, people, nation, and the world, that is the vertical and horizontal courses consisting of eight stages, are completed. Due to this, the right of the eldest son has been restored, and the course of indemnity for all humanity is abolished. P.1187. left. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages. By holding this ceremony, the Parents forgave both the elder and the younger son, so that next we can enter the age of the realm of forgiveness for the fallen parents. P.1187. right. Ch.3.Sec.3.3.

Everyone thinks Abel is more precious, but that is a mistake. Abel is in the younger brother's position, and Cain is in the elder son's position. You must understand this correctly. The position of the firstborn son is more precious than that of the second son, Abel. There is only one firstborn son, but younger brothers can be many. P.1188. right. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

As God carried out the dispensation for restoration, His grief lay in the fact that the firstborn son was on Satan's side. That is why human history is diseased. P.1189. left. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

We were born for the sake of others. You must also realize that man was born for the sake of woman. There is no such thing as "I". P.1189. right. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

Due to the Fall, the first son, Cain, stands on Satan's side. He belongs to Satan's side. In order to save him, God designated Abel. God designates Abel to restore the right of the firstborn son. P.1189. right. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

The big question is whether I have loved the satanic world more than I love my wife and children. I cannot love my family more than I love those who stand in the Cain position. God has to love the Cain realm first before loving the Abel realm. He cannot love Abel before that. P.1189-90. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

If you are to be victorious, you must go out into the world. You must go out and restore the rights of the firstborn son. The firstborn son must ultimately attend the second son, who is the younger brother, as though he were an older brother, and come to the point where he can say, "I will receive all the blessings through you." In this way, the firstborn son comes down to the position of the second son, and the second son must rise up to take the position of the firstborn son. So only after the first son says, "You go up, instead of me," and pushes the second son forward, does it become possible to move from the family level rights of the first son to the tribal level rights of the firstborn son, and so on. In this way, you can go up stage-by-stage. Only when the first son pushes you, can you go up. You cannot go up as you are. Because of this principle, you must fulfill the standard of restoring the rights of the firstborn son in this way. Without doing so, and this is the secret of history, the dispensation of God cannot be successful. That is why, in order to go the way of a true religion, you must leave your home. P.1190. left. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

Instead of beating His enemy to death God must set the condition of having loved him. In the same way the person standing in the position of Adam has to set up a condition of having loved the enemy Satan. If you endure over and over again while being persecuted, and prevail over all the tears, blood and sweat, until the enemy naturally surrenders to you, and return embracing God's love, then you can receive the blessing. That is when Satan will let you go. You must receive this public approval; "You can now become a child qualified to go to the heavenly kingdom." Who must sign this approval? Satan must. After Satan signs this, you will sign it, and then True Parents must sign it. You can stand before God only after getting this signature from True Parents. That is the heavenly kingdom. P.1191-2. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

Once I set the condition of having loved Satan on the world level, then he cannot take away those who follow me. Then what happens? Cain and Abel will switch their positions. The Abel realm up, until present, was in a position of people who are chased after, but from now on, it will possess the right of the eldest son of God's Kingdom. The satanic world will collapse. It will only retreat, unable to generate any opposition. If it even tries to oppose, it will be crushed into pieces. This is the view of the Principle. P.1192. left. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

I have restored the right of the eldest son and the rights of parents haven't I? I even obtained the right of kingship. So, if only you are united with me, if only Mother and younger children build the foundation of a mother-child cooperation, that's the final task to be done. P.1193. right. Ch.3.Sec.4.1.

Thus, Adam and Eve would become the king and the queen at the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and the world. Since the time has come when we can transcend the national level, we can tread down upon the royal power of the satanic world, and establish the right of king of the heavenly world. That day is March 27, 1990. P.1194. left. Ch.3.Sec.4.3.

Presidents come and go so they just exploit their position, so things don't go well. If an absolute king emerged, there would be no problem. A world of absolute peace would then come. P.1194. top right. Ch.3.Sec.4.3.

First, people need to find the True Parents, and then everything else, including true children, true nation, and true peace can be found. There is no other way. P.1194. right. Ch.3.Sec.4.3.

If a head of state learned the Principle, what would happen? It would be only a short time before he saved the nation. Now we are entering the era of restoring the kingship. In the future, it will not be necessary for all of the citizens of a country to



believe. If the president of a country fixes its constitution so that it is based on the Principle, the restoration of that nation becomes possible at once. P.1196. left. Ch.3.Sec.4.3.

Being in a position where I understood the principle of restoration through indemnity, if only the Christian church had believed in me immediately after the Second World War, eventually Dr. Lee would have knelt before me. After Dr. Lee became president of South Korea, I would have had to bless him. If the government had started out as in the past, when the Roman Popes blessed the kings, Korea would not have been divided. If this had been accomplished within three and a half years... but because that didn't happen, Korea was divided. P.1196. left. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

Korea gained its independence through the U.S.A. and stood as the domain of God's tribe, an independent country belonging to the Abel realm of God, within the sphere of America's protection. Within this sphere of protection, Christianity and Rev. Moon were supposed to become one as Cain and Abel. Had unity been achieved at this point, the national standard of the Republic of Korea would have been established at once. If Christianity had united with me, unifying Korea, and then connecting to the United States, the world would have been restored within seven years. This was God's will. P.1196. right. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

Just as happened at the time of Eve's Fall, when she tempted Adam, so the Eve nation on Satan's side was to forcibly take over the Adam nation and make it go through a forty-year indemnity course, based on the number four. This manifested itself through the forty-year oppression of Korea by Japan. This was to indemnify the history of four thousand years.

As a result, Satan will be crushed in this fight. Then, who will be liberated? The Adam nation will be liberated. Through this, Britain, the United States, and France, representing the realm of Christian culture on God's side, should have united. In this way, God's side could have removed the seeds Satan had sown, regained the Adam, Eve and Abel nations, and then regained the Cain nation. God's side would have taken control. In this way, the opening of the gates of the restored Kingdom of Heaven would have been possible at that time.

However, the number seven could not be fulfilled within seven years after the Second World War between 1945 and 1952. Had this happened, this world, starting from the government of Rhee Sung-man (Syngman Rhee) would have completely... If the United States, Britain and France had united, then Japan would not be the Eve nation today and Germany would not be the Cain nation. If the nations on God's side, Britain as the Eve nation, the United States as the Abel nation, and France as the archangel nation, had united around Korea and established themselves firmly in these positions, then the unified world of the Christian cultural sphere would have been realized. For the first time, a unified world centered on the Christian cultural sphere would have emerged. It would have come about because it is aligned with the appearance of the father nation, the Adam nation. P.1197. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

It seemed as if the Jewish people were almost completely destroyed during the war in Europe. Six million were massacred. Through this massacre, however, the gates to a new era opened. As a result, Israel became independent in 1948. Through Korea gaining its independence, Israel also became independent. Within three years that connection naturally occurred. P.1198. left. Ch.3.Sec.5.1.

Korea is similar to a male sexual organ. It is a peninsula. The reason Italy has made a historic contribution to the creation of global culture is because it is a peninsula. A peninsula represents the male sexual organ. An island nation represents the woman's sexual parts. P.1198. right. Ch.3. Sec.5.2.

If the Christian foundation had accepted me, England would have been the Eve nation. The Adam nation is Korea. England the Eve nation, France the archangel nation, Germany the Adam nation on the Cain side, all should have automatically become one, but these countries all went against God's will and opposed it. That is why the enemy took what he loved the most: the Eve nation, and Germany, the male nation. P.1199. left. Ch.3. Sec.5.2.

I didn't bless Japan for the sake of Japan itself. It was for the sake of the world, the Unification Church, and Korea. Japan will perish if it doesn't use that blessing for the unification of Korea. P.1199. bottom left. Ch.3. Sec.5.2.

Eve and the three archangels, centering on Adam, were to unite with God and enter the Heavenly Kingdom. That was the ideal. Therefore as a representative of the position of Adam, I am now moving Japan, the Eve nation, America, China and the Soviet Union. Thus the situation has returned to a position where I can deal with the three archangels and the realm of Eve. P.1199. right. Ch.3. Sec.5.2.

The reason I created a newspaper company was to call together minorities. The countries where Native American peoples live are the countries of Rev. Moon's cousins. Asia is the elder brother. The younger brother separated from there and came onto the American continent. P.1200. right. Ch.3. Sec.5.3.

At the time of Jesus' crucifixion, the thief to the right of Jesus and the thief to his left fought, but in front of me, they became united. P.1200. right. Ch.3. Sec.5.3.

If the American citizens had helped, and had Nixon offered his support, the Unification Church would have instantly created a worldwide foundation at that time. As Nixon did not fulfill his responsibility, and was unable to stand firm, it took me whole twelve years and the four "eras" from Nixon to Ford, Carter and currently Reagan, to accomplish the restoration through indemnity. Our mission is to return the world to a position higher than the one the worldwide communist realm had forty years ago, centered upon the year 1988. P.1202. bottom left. Ch.3. Sec.5.3.

In the Last Days, the sons of the most fervent members of the Soviet communist party will become the most fervent followers of the Unification Church, and in America, the sons and daughters of ministers and officials who most aggressively opposed our church will all stand up for Rev. Moon. P.1202. right. Ch.3. Sec.5.3.

Thus, the Unification Church has restored through indemnity the situation of Jesus who was killed by the combined opposition of Israel, Judaism and Rome. On the basis of being welcomed and gaining a victory in the United States, I am returning to Korea with that authority and with the cooperation of all America and American Christianity. So, the Unification Church and the Korean government are joining together to put pressure on Christianity in Korea. In this way Jesus' death has been restored through indemnity. P.1204. bottom left. Ch.3. Sec.5.3.

Since the start of history based on the principle of restoration through indemnity, Koreans have been a homogeneous race with a five-thousand-year history. P.1204. bottom right. Ch.3. Sec.5.4.

If everyone comes to understand the meaning of indemnity, then they would like that word the best. Without indemnity, there is no blessing. It is indemnity that has the value of gold in the Unification Church. Indemnity is an amazing word that enables us to even risk our lives, sacrifice everything, and overcome all difficulties. P.1206. bottom right. Ch.4. Sec.1.1.

The history of restoration is not something you accomplish just based on explanations. First, you do things, achieve victory, and in this way you take charge of the situation. If there were a way to receive explanations from someone, the sixty-six books of the Old and New Testaments would not have been necessary. Ten pages would have been enough to record everything. Why would we need the sixty-six books? They would be useless. We would not even need ten pages. Three pages should be enough to record everything. P.1206-7. Ch.4. Sec.1.1.

How did Adam fall? He fell due to his disbelief. Disbelief was the primary reason. Next, Adam fell because he asserted himself. He put himself, his ego in the center of everything. Adam fell because he took a self-centered position. Next, Adam demanded a realm of self-centered love. These are the three major elements of the Fall: disbelief, self-assertion or self-centeredness, and finally dreams of self-centered love. These are the footholds of Satan. The fallen angels were like this. P.1207. left. Ch.4. Sec.1.1.

Why am I giving you a suffering course? It is because you have to go the way of indemnity. I, too, intend to walk the way of indemnity my whole life. I am not reluctant to do it. One should walk this path willingly. You must understand that. Even when I go to prison, I do it willingly. I have to go there for the sake of indemnity. If I complain, my actions cannot be considered as indemnity. P.1207. right. Ch.4. Sec.1.1.

The Kingdom of Heaven is a place where we attend God as the absolute center and develop relationships of love through Him. God carries out the providence of salvation in order to set this foundation straight, so asserting oneself is absolutely inadmissible. P.1208-9. Ch.4. Sec.1.2.

In order to make a wild olive tree into a true olive tree, we must cut off the wild tree and graft onto it the scion of the true tree. Similarly, in order for people who are like wild olive trees to become true olive trees, they must go through the process where they first deny themselves and then totally affirm something new. By doing so, a person changes his intrinsic nature from that of a wild olive tree to that of a true olive tree, so that he can emerge as a person led only by goodness. P.1209. left. Ch.4. Sec.2.1.

The foundation of substance means removing fallen nature, but that is done by uniting Cain and Abel. If you wish to restore yourself, your fallen nature must be completely eliminated and you must put aside your feelings of closeness to your kin. If you are told, "Go to the east!" you must say "Yes" and do so. And if you are told, "Go to the west!" you also say "Yes" and obey. If you object, you are not going to be restored. If you object, can restoration be accomplished? You must follow absolutely. P.1209. top right. Ch.4. Sec.2.1.

From the Principle you know about the foundation of faith and the foundation of substance. Even if you have established the foundation of substance, that substance is not to be offered to God. It serves as a foundation for the Messiah, that is, a substance that can welcome the Messiah. P.1212. left. Ch.4. Sec.2.1.

The term "Foundation of faith" refers to an unshakable person of principle establishing a foundation of faith that enables him to be one with God's Principle, without changing his position whether it is day or night, regardless of seasonal changes, throughout his youth, middle age, and old age. Only after that, a foundation of substance based on the Principle will be established. P.1212. bottom left. Ch.4. Sec.2.2.

While creating the universe, God was not playing around or dancing. He invested His utmost devotion, 100 percent of it, when He was creating. The way of restoration means re-creating; this time is the same as the time when God was creating, and so can you play around while going this path? P.1213. left. Ch.4. Sec.3.1.

If God demanded from fallen people fulfillment of the same portion of responsibility as that of Adam and Eve, we would have no hope to restore ourselves to the original position before the Fall. We lost a chance to fulfill our portion of responsibility. So now to compensate for this, we must set indemnity conditions. P.1213. right. Ch.4. Sec.3.1.

Don't you all dislike indemnity? Don't you dislike God and His providence? From today you must renew yourselves and not forget this, even if you forget to eat, to sleep, to think about your loved ones. That is how serious it is. Even God must go through this. Rev. Moon must also go through this in his lifetime. All Unification Church members and the whole world must walk this path; otherwise there is no way for them to go. P.1213-14. Ch.4. Sec.3.1.

The external indemnity conditions are that of Cain and Abel, and the internal indemnity conditions are that of Adam. P.1214. left. Ch.4. Sec.3.1.

God's law drove Adam and Eve out, but are you better than Adam and Eve? Answer me. Are you any better than them, or not? If you are inferior to them, then throwing you away is not a big deal. If people just put on airs and come in and out of the church that does not make them Unification Church members. P.1215. left. Ch.4. Sec.3.1.

Cain and Abel are not fully responsible for everything. Then who is? Adam and Eve, the Parents, are. Since I have that responsibility, I am responsible for everything you could not accomplish and for everything that Christianity failed to do. So, in forty years I fixed everything on the levels of an individual, family, tribe, people, nation, and the world. P.1215. right. Ch.4. Sec.3.1.

True Parents are people with such value that cannot be exchanged even if you offered your life millions and billions of times over. Therefore, you must find True Parents and be able to say, "I put my life at stake to follow you." P.1217. right. Ch.4. Sec.4.1.

While you are witnessing or fundraising as a Unification Church member, do you know what happens if you start saying, "Oh, this is too hard for me, I can't do it!" It becomes something centered on you, not centered on God. When you think about such basic principles, you must clearly understand that if anyone who has become a Unification Church member says he cannot go on, or complains while doing his task, that disqualifies him. Those who work in the Unification Church for their own benefit may very soon begin complaining about Rev. Moon and the church when faced with difficulty and assert that all the work they have done in the Unification Church is theirs. P.1218. left. Ch.4. Sec.4.1.

You must invest God's love and the power of your life into all the nations. As you do so, God will never answer your questions, and He will pretend that He does not see what you are doing. God cannot interfere. He will not interfere until your investment is complete. What is the human portion of responsibility? It means attaining completion on your own, doesn't it? Similarly, when you go forward with prayer, God does not interfere. It is really strange, but God sometimes even opposes you. P.1218. right. Ch.4. Sec.4.1.

God is such a miserable being. In order to save human beings who fell into the pits of misery, God is waking people up from sleep, shouting "Come! Come to me!" But God cannot make people come to Him like that. They must fulfill their portion of responsibility. So, as God cannot do our part for us, how difficult it is for God to do His work! P.1219. left. Ch.4. Sec.4.1.

Human beings are in a midway position where they must determine whether they belong to the side of goodness or to the side of evil. A person cannot receive help from a third party to decide whether he is heading in the direction of goodness or evil; he must decide this by himself. Furthermore, we must understand that since we are the descendants of fallen people who were unable to fulfill their portion of responsibility, we stand at a serious crossroad where we must decide this. P.1219. bottom left. Ch.4. Sec.4.2.

Why should we separate from Satan? It is because we need the foundation of a free environment where we can naturally fulfill our original portion of responsibility. P.1219. right. Ch.4. Sec.5.1.

Why should we be separated from Satan? In order to find the realm of the portion of responsibility. Originally, Satan does not exist in the realm of the portion of responsibility. That is the realm of Adam's portion of responsibility. The original standard is that the realm of Adam's portion of responsibility cannot be invaded by Satan. We need to instill that clear notion into people's minds. P.1220. left. Ch.4. Sec.5.1.

We must love God and love other people more than we love Satan. He hates God and hates humankind, but we on the opposite side must be able to say, "I love God and humankind more than I love you." P.1221. left. Ch.4. Sec.5.1.

Are you better than Adam and Eve? Answer me. Are you any better than them, or not? If you are inferior to them, then throwing you away is not a big deal. If people just put on airs and come in and out of the church that does not make them Unification Church members. P.1221. bottom left. Ch.4. Sec.5.1.

Satan invaded upon the condition of people not fulfilling their responsibility. Therefore, once the portion of responsibility is fulfilled, Satan will be banished. Satan cannot stay once the portion of responsibility is fulfilled. P.1221. right. Ch.4. Sec.5.1.

Arrogant behavior is Satan's characteristic. He cannot go down to a low place. P.1222. top left. Ch.4. Sec.5.1.

In order to protect yourself from Satan, you must love God more than you love anybody else. You must love Him more than you love anybody in this world and in the universe. You must love God more than you love yourself. Since you are a fallen person, you must love God more than you love your own self. Satan loves himself more than he loves God and the world. That is Satan. Therefore, if you are basing your life on individualism, you are the princes of Satan. P.1222. left. Ch.4. Sec.5.1.

I have confronted Satan in tens, hundreds, thousands or even tens of thousands of life-and-death situations. I never altered the standard I had set, even when unspeakably difficult circumstances surged against me repeatedly like waves. I will not depart from the standard of heart that I had at the beginning, even if my legs break, my eyeballs pop out, or my head falls off. Thus, as long as I do not die, I will win. P.1223. right. Ch.4. Sec.5.2.

On the contrary, if you deny yourself and put God in the center of your thinking and your life, Satan will no longer control you; instead, God will come to you and take charge of you. By doing so, you can be liberated from the archangelic realm of the satanic world. You will rise from the position of the fallen archangel to the position of the archangel who is not

fallen. Therefore, you must die! Act as if you are dead. You have to be trampled under foot constantly. P.1223-4. Ch.4. Sec.5.2.

As far as I know, there is no way you can unite mind and body when rising to a high position. If you rise to the top with a lofty mindset, there is no way to be united. You must be trampled on. Even in my case, God has been trampling on me with His feet for forty years now, so that I would not rise high. Since He's been doing that, all my aspirations to rise were stirred up and I could unite with Him. You must be cursed at, trampled upon, and mistreated wherever you go, like Kim Sat-gat who roamed all over the Korean peninsula. But even in such circumstances you must discover yourself and be able to digest everything with joy. P.1224. left. Ch.4. Sec.5.2.

If the Fall had not occurred, Heaven would have done 95 percent and we would only have to do five percent. But due to the Fall, God cannot do that for us again. We must accomplish re-creation. That means we must do 95 percent plus 5 percent. P.1224. right. Ch.4. Sec.6.

Nowadays, even religious people tend to lead a very habitual life. A routine life of faith is dangerous. Such a life of faith becomes a major factor presenting Satan with the conditions for accusation. P.1225. top left. Ch.4. Sec.6.

Restoration through indemnity is not conditional restoration. You must understand that indemnity is real. This is not written in the Divine Principle. It is probably the first time that you are hearing that conditional indemnity is actually real indemnity. P.1225. left. Ch.4. Sec.6.

What is indemnity centered on? What is the content of indemnity? It is the issue of love: whether you love Satan more or God more. Everything is about the issue of love. In order to pay indemnity, you must believe in God absolutely. However, Satan did not believe in God absolutely. He betrayed God. Satan betrayed God during the course of his mission. Therefore, when you are going the way of indemnity, first of all your faith and actions must be absolute. P.1225. lower right. Ch.4. Sec.6.

In the era of restoration through indemnity people have been moving in circles: if the first attempt failed, they could have a second one. In this way they were able to progress. Now, however, we have passed the era of restoration through indemnity and entered the era of restoration. In the era of restoration we cannot take our time to resolve mistakes. P.1226. left. Ch.4. Sec.6.

Knowing that everything we do we do by Heaven's direction, you must be grateful. If you continue being grateful you will ultimately come to a world you had never thought of, and the world that opposed you will fall into consequences it would have never imagined. That is why the life of those who live in attendance of Heaven must be filled with gratitude. P.1226. bottom left. Ch.4. Sec.6.

You cannot go this way unless you ride on the back of Parents. No matter how filthy a fly may be, if it clings to the belly of a swift horse and endures without falling away, the fly can travel a thousand miles. You are in the same position. You must cling onto True Parents and move together with them, even if you are upside down; you must not fall off. P.1227. left. Ch.4. Sec.6.

Those who have completed restoration through indemnity, raise your hands. You no-goods! You fickle scoundrels! You ought to be beaten with a club; you have to be cursed! You should be struck by lightning! If you haven't done it, even I cannot help you. I taught you everything clearly. The spirit world is transformed according to what I say. If you go there without doing that, you'll be trapped. No matter how much husband and wife say they have loved their children, when they go to the spirit world that will all stop.

Just as paradise has emerged in the spirit world, for the families in the Unification Church there will be a paradise where they stay before entering the Kingdom of Heaven. You won't even be able to love there. How can you love each other? You won't be able to love your own child, no matter how much you may want to. What will you do? Even though wives may tell their husbands, "You used to love me, so why do you act differently after coming here?" Husbands won't be able to love them. You won't be able to love. In the position you are in, you are not supposed to love. P.1227-8. Ch.4. Sec.6.

Didn't God drive Adam and Eve out of the Garden of Eden? There was no way to deal with those reprobates. There were only two of them, so there was no way to deal with it. But now, it is different. P.1228. right. Ch.4. Sec.6.

Absolute faith will pass, and absolute obedience will also pass; what remains at the very end is absolute love. Faith, love, and hope, these three are always there, but what is said to be the first among these three? Love! Faith passes and hope also passes, but love remains until the very end. I am telling you the same thing. Even absolute faith will pass. P.1230. left. Ch.4. Sec.7.

A true filial son is the one who obeys. A true loyal subject even when being chased and put to death by traitors never calls his king incapable. A true loyal subject is a person of integrity and loyalty, who sheds tears with a sorrowful heart, and wishes his king a long life even when persecuted by treacherous courtiers to the point of death. This is absolute obedience. The only way to bring about success through absolute obedience is the way of true love. P.1232. bottom left. Ch.4. Sec.7.

## **BOOK 9 – BLESSED FAMILY**

Out of the three generations, it was the generation of Adam and Eve, the second generation, where the problem occurred. P.1239. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.1.

What is the most precious thing in my life? It is the Blessing. Even for you, the greatest gift in all of history has been the Blessing. P.1239. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.1.

True Parents take eternal responsibility for those who have received the Blessing, even when they pass on to the spirit world. I will guide and lead them. The Blessing establishes an eternal relationship between those who receive it and me. P.1239. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.1.

The full authority of Heaven is passed on when the Blessing is bestowed. P.1239. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.1.

The Blessing opens the gates of the Kingdom of Heaven. The Kingdom of Heaven is a place where only families with children enter. P.1239. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.1.

The Blessing is an eternal treasure. It is a pledge to begin a lineage that will span ten thousand generations. That is why when you defile the Blessing, your whole clan will be affected, just as the whole nation of Israel was affected by the crucifixion of Jesus. P.1239. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.1.

In the same way, when your children receive great love from Heaven, even if you're sagging, you'll be pulled up just like the power lines. You receive benefit in this way. P.1242. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.1.

Although our circumstances are not yet settled at the moment, my hope is that a day will come when those who remain true to the Blessing to the last will be honored as human treasures. P.1242. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.1.

That is why when you make vows to take responsibility for a person, you should be ready and willing to do so forever. You must understand clearly that the place of the Blessing is where these questions come up and are answered. For this reason, if a person has a chance to be in the place of the Blessing, he is truly a happy person. You must have firm resolve if you are to take part in receiving this great Blessing. P.1242-3. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.2.

Even in the human world, when men who have been bachelors or women who have been virgins die before they marry, they will be bachelor ghosts and virgin ghosts. Because they could not marry, they naturally became ghosts; this is just how the heavenly laws operate. P.1243. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.2.

The fact that you have become Unification Church members and have received the Blessing, signifies that you have now reached the victorious standard of having restored your family centering on God's will, for which purpose God had sent Jesus on the foundation laid by four thousand years of history. Through your victorious standard, your descendants can now inherit the grace of their ancestors who were people of merit spanning the history of restoration. This is true even if your descendants have no opportunity to accomplish anything in the providence of restoration themselves. P.1244-5. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.2.

You must think like this: "I will not change as long as God does not change. I will go on, no matter what is taken from me by someone or something from my past or present, be it a life, love or ideal that was rooted in the satanic world. Furthermore, even if God Himself changed, I will restore Him, and go on together with Him. If God is not absolute, I will make Him absolute." Once you have these thoughts in your mind, God Himself will be absolutely obedient to you. P.1245. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.2.

There is no need for you to seek God. You need to seek love before seeking God. If you have love in you, God will automatically come to you. He will be drawn to you and bind Himself to you. That is why, if you want to seek God and love Him, you must think of human beings in this world as your brothers and sisters, and love them and relate to them as you would your parents, or even God. If you do so, God will come to you. P.1245. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.2.

Even if the last couple to be blessed is crippled, with one eye, crooked nose, one ear, and one arm, they will be glorified by the world. Their physical appearance and anything else that is lacking will not matter; only the fact that they received the Blessing through True Parents will be important. That is something you cannot buy even if you were to pay billions of dollars. P.1246. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.2.

The large holy wedding conducted by the Unification Church is not restricted to our church alone. It is the formula course that all humanity must go through. P.1246. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.3.

Have any of you ever seen a wedding in which the father and mother were the officiators? The fact that such a wedding was never held testifies to the fact that there is not one perfected individual in the world. P.1247. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.3.

Weddings not officiated by the parents are officiated by the archangel. When an eminent person comes to officiate at a wedding, alone, like an odd shoe, he is conducting the wedding as the archangel. P.1247. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.3.

I think it strange that American youths are allowed to find their own spouses. This is something that is not allowed in the Holy Scriptures, and yet they are doing so in a Christian nation. P.1248. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.3.

Why should you get married? It is in order to resemble the form of God. P.1248. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.1.

Marriage exists in order to perfect the ideal of creation. In other words, you get married to fulfill the purpose of creation. Then whose purpose is the purpose of creation? It is God's purpose before it can ever become the purpose of Adam. So, it follows that God should feel joy before Adam. That is the way it should be. Considering all this, for whom do we get married? It is for God. P.1249. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.1.

God exists with dual characteristics. Therefore, when the time comes for matured Adam and Eve to form the connection of love with each other, God's masculinity can reside in Adam and His femininity can reside in Eve. By residing in our minds and bodies, God Himself can also be a part of the marriage. Adam's mind is like the holy of holies, his body is like the most holy place, and God is residing in him, both in mind and body. If this had come to pass, Adam and Eve would both have become the body of God. Adam would resemble the male characteristics of God, and Eve the female characteristics. When they come together in holy matrimony, that wedding ceremony would be where the kingship of the universe is established. What is that kingship? It is the kingship of love. P.1249-50. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.1.

From the place where we come to meet with Him, the right of inheritance of the universe is bequeathed. The world created by God, centering on love, belongs to Him, but that world can become mine through the right of inheritance. P.1250. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.1.

This is why marriage refers not only to the fulfillment of God's love, but also to the bequeathal of the rights of creation and dominion. P.1251. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.1.

The reason people need to get married is so they can relate to the love of God. In other words, a man and woman cannot fully connect to the love of God if they are not married. P.1251. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.2.

If a man does not know how to truly love a woman, he cannot love God or humanity. P.1253. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.2.

The man must realize that the woman who stands before him is the daughter of God and the daughter of humanity. If he can love the woman as the beloved daughter of humanity and of God, he has the right to become the husband. But if not, he cannot become her spouse. It is the same in the case of the woman. She should not think, "He is my man!" Firstly, she should consider him as the son of God and the man who represents all men of humanity. She should be the woman who can love him more than anyone else and even love him more than God Himself.

So, man and woman should get married with this thought in their mind: The man should act as the right foot and the woman as the left foot, and together they can move forward, step by step, taking footsteps of love for the sake of humanity and God, through their family. The right foot is the husband and the left foot is the wife. In that sense, if you do not get married, you are crippled.

Furthermore, both right foot and left foot should be perfect. If one foot is not perfect, the marriage would become lame. That is why only perfected men and perfected women can lead a harmonious married life. When a wife likes her husband, it is the same as her liking humanity and God. When she loves her husband, it is the same as her loving humanity and God. P.1253-4. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.3.

Have you ever seen a green flower? I have visited many botanical gardens, and I have never seen a green flower. A flower the same color as the leaves would be completely useless. From this you can see that the laws of nature go beyond our comprehension. The example of the green flower is enough to convince you that there is a God. P.1254. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.3.

The free love marriages you see in the world today are traps set by Satan, trying to make people fall so they cannot move towards the presence of God. Once you are caught in this trap, you will spiritually die and be controlled by Satan, or become his prey.

Because of widespread free marriage in modern Western society, particularly the United States, it is becoming more difficult to form true families. The number of people who fail in family life is increasing day-by-day, so that in the not-too-distant future, the majority of people will not have families at all. When that happens, American society will become increasingly loveless. I can tell you with conviction that, in the end, it will become a hell-like society, dominated by anxiety and fear because of mistrust. P.1255. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.3.

"But we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons' but you have received the Spirit of adoption, whereby we cry, Abba! Father!" Adopted children are of a different bloodline. P.1256. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.1.

The only son and only daughter created personally by God with His own hands were Adam and Eve. P.1259. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.2

Through the Fall, we lost the true parent, true husband, and true child. This all happened because of Eve and the archangel. From this point of view, women living on earth today are dependent on the archangel father, archangel husband, and archangel brother. That is why these women are wretched. P.1261. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.2

Because of the complex entanglement of the human lineage, restoration has taken six thousand years; otherwise, almighty God would have restored everything in a day. It's as if there is a chronic disease in the bloodline; if it were to be pulled out all at once, everyone would die. That is why it has taken six thousand years. P.1261. right. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.2

When we trace the Fall of Adam and Eve to the source, we can see that they fell because they did not obey God's commandment, "Do not eat of the fruit of the tree of knowledge of good and evil!"

The second cause of the Fall was that they became self-centered. The third cause was that they tried to love centering on themselves. This is the essence of the story that lies behind the Fall. So, we can conclude that everything connected to this is on the side of Satan. All fallen human beings have loved illicitly and self-centeredly. Therefore, we can assume that the people of the satanic world are those who express love centering on themselves. P.1262. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.2

When a woman meets a good husband, she becomes a good mother, but if it meets with an evil husband, she becomes an evil mother. P.1262. left. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.2

Therefore, you should be thankful for this great blessing which has been bestowed upon you, which is the grace of being able to live in the same era as True Parents and act upon their orders. P.1265. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.1.

Even if you lost all of past history, all the ages, and all of your descendants, if you were to meet true parents, you would regain history, the ages, and the future. You should understand that this is what true parents are able to do. P.1265. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.1.

The True Parent, as the perfected Adam, must restore the standard of the first parents, which Adam failed to meet. He must also perfect the standard of the parent that Jesus, who came as the second Adam, failed to achieve. The reason I have no choice but to establish a tradition of suffering in this era of the Second Advent is because Jesus established the spiritual foundation but failed to establish both spiritual and physical foundations on the world level. P.1265. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.1.

To convert the lineage, the requirements for a victory bound to the love of God must be fulfilled in the seed of the future children of an Adamic figure, and must penetrate as deep as the bone marrow, flesh and blood of that person. P.1266-7. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.2.

True Parents and their children are an eternal, unchanging and predestined original family whose course needs to be fulfilled providentially. This is a bond of parent-child relationship that no one can break up. This is the eternal path. There are not two paths; there is only one path. There is no other way. There is no secret method. The only thing for us to do is to follow that path. P.1267. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.2.

The Fall occurred through the wrongful marriage in the Garden of Eden. Now the time has come for True Parents to overturn this, by marrying people in the right way. The trouble caused by the false parents should be solved by the True Parents. Through them, hell can be eliminated and the millions and billions of ancestors in the spirit world can be blessed in holy matrimony. Through the foundation of the families of descendants on earth, centering on true love, the ancestors in the spirit world and the descendants on earth can unite into one vertically. The East and West will be connected horizontally with this vertical family foundation. What should an adopted son do? He must be grafted to the true son. The wild olive tree must be cut off at the root, and then the sprout of the true olive tree can be grafted into it. It would be as if there were a movement to convert all the wild olive trees into true olive trees. In order to be reborn, you need to inherit the lineage of True Parents. That is why the whole of humanity hopes for True Parents, and Jesus and the Holy Spirit yearned to carry out the marriage feast of the Lamb. P.1267-8. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.2.

You have been bought. You have been bought, along with humanity and the universe. That is why God wants to judge the universe with you. He bought you, who were in the position of slaves in the satanic world, to become His sons and daughters. Therefore, you are the blessed children of glory and you should be ready to give yourselves for the world when it asks for you. You should be ready to give everything you have even to Satan. You were bought with the blood and sweat of True Father. You were bought with my own flesh and blood. Therefore, you should carry out the same work as I. P.1268. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.2.

Rebirth refers to the complete reformation of the mind. P.1269. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.2.1.

When you are grafting the sprout of the true olive tree to the wild olive tree, you cannot just cut off the branch and graft the sprout there; you must cut off the wild olive tree at the base so that only the roots remain, and graft the sprout there. This means that when the Lord at his Second Advent comes to this world the existing churches should change their old systems, organizations, and rituals, and start new. P.1269-70. Ch.1. Sec.2.2.1.

The fruits that Christians have produced through their lives of faith are the fruits of the wild olive tree. In order to produce fruits of the true olive tree, they need to be cut off at the base and have the sprout of the true olive tree grafted on to them. If the sprout cannot be grafted, the tree should be pulled up completely and burned to ashes. If the wild olive tree is not uprooted completely, it will produce further fruits, which will then be strewn around the tree and will grow into more wild olive trees.

The cutting down of wild olive trees is necessary in order to graft the sprouts of the true olive tree on to them. The problem here is that the sprout of the true olive tree and the sprout of the wild olive tree look exactly alike from the outside and so disputes may arise. In particular, at the time of the Second Coming, many Antichrists will appear and those trying to find the truth may be confused. That is why you have been told, "Pray constantly, without resting or sleeping!"

By cutting off the wild olive tree at the base and grafting the true olive tree on to it, all wild olive trees will disappear. The field where they used to be will become a field of true olive trees. P.1270. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.2.1.

You say you need to be reborn, but in order to accomplish this, you need to love Jesus more than you love anyone. P.1270. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.2.2.

For 2000 years, they have cried out to heaven, "Jesus, our groom, please come quickly!" even though he did not come. When they reach the stage where their bodies are ready to burst, their hearts are being torn, their bones are melting, their spirit is hovering between life and death, and when they are connecting directly only with God or Jesus, only then, will the Holy Spirit come down upon them.

When the Holy Spirit comes to them, spiritual rebirth will occur. Through this, their spirits can be reborn into spiritual babies. Those of you gathered here, have you ever had such an experience? If you have not had one such experience, you are still the sons and daughters of the satanic world. You must understand that you can still be accused by Satan. Such people cannot go to the Kingdom of Heaven. They have no choice but to go to hell. P.1270-1. Ch.1. Sec.2.2.2.

People in the world, who were born before the True Mother came into existence, were born in vain. P.1271. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.2.2.

There is no other way of becoming one with Jesus except through love. You cannot become one with him through truth or justice. P.1271. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.2.2.

You must know that in order to become the one who can perform it (the Blessing), I walked the tearful path of the cross. Because I set such a standard, you are able to become a part of the tradition of the Blessing without having to do anything for it. It took thousands of years of hard work on God's part and my substantial life course, which was filled with hardships and suffering, to establish the victorious realm of the conversion of lineage. P.1271. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.3.

The precious blood of Jesus and the ritual of the Last Supper all symbolize the providence of becoming the children of God through the conversion of the lineage. P.1272. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.3.

The first human ancestors were thrown out of the Garden of Eden when they fell, even though they were not fully matured; bearing that in mind, there would be dire consequences if you committed a sin on the foundation of the perfected standard of heart. If that were to happen, God would not want to see you ever again and neither would I. P.1272-3. Ch.1. Sec.2.3.

You should not think of the ceremony as a normal religious ritual, just because it is a Unification Church ritual. This ceremony is like an injection that revives a person from death. It is like an antidote. P.1274. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.3.

Of all the religions, only Christianity has placed importance on the lineage, and laid down the conversion of lineage as its main ideology. You cannot find this in any other religion, and that is why you can safely conclude that we must follow this teaching. P.1274. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.3.

The indemnity stick ceremony and the three-day ceremony make it seem very complicated, don't they? During these ceremonies, Satan cannot intrude. P.1275. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.1.

Then, what are the engagement, holy wine ceremony and wedding ceremony? They are not performed just for the sake of themselves. They are the ceremonies that must be inevitably carried out to re-enact and indemnify the Fall. P.1275. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.1.

What is the purpose of the holy wine ceremony? It is a ritual of putting the body of God into one's own body, centering on a new love. P.1275. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.1.

When making the holy wine, one must pass through the process of selecting twenty-one elements. You don't know what they are, do you? In this process, you need to focus on the fruits borne on trees, on the ground, and underground, and select twenty-one of the most precious elements from the mineral, plant and animal kingdoms. Moreover, these elements should not in any way be connected to conditions that can be accused. The wine has to be kept in storage for seven months, and nothing must disturb its purity during this period. P.1275-6. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.1.

The holy wine ceremony is the ceremony of restoration through indemnity. When you participate in this ceremony, you attend in the position of the archangel. That is why everything including the lineage must be offered through it. Everything is restored through the ceremony. It is a condition for restoration. I conduct the ceremony through True Mother. You are all in the same situation. A bridge is being laid. Through attending the holy wine ceremony, you can enter the position of restoration, which is the same as the position of parents. You must realize this.

The woman receives the holy wine first. The woman first bows to Father, accepts the holy wine, and drinks half of what is in the cup. Then the husband bows. While the woman is drinking her half, the man should have his head bowed. At that very moment, the woman is in the position of the mother. She represents the mother. Under these conditions, the woman drinks half and hands the remaining half to the man for him to drink. When the man drinks the remaining half, the relationship between the two is formed. Then the man can stand on an equal level with the woman. P.1276. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.1.

It is made in the presence of God and Satan, and the angels in the spirit world. There are twenty-one elements within it that you do not know about. The wine contains all the elements that are formed in the process of restoring the physical world and humankind. When making the holy wine, spirits from the spirit world come and implore me to pour a glass for them so that they can partake of it. It is because they know that by drinking the holy wine they can be restored. That is why they come to me in a group and ask to share in the benefit. They know that I can bestow on them this benefit. However, I am not here for the spirit world. I am here for the physical world. That is why I tell the spirits, "Wait!" and give the wine to you, for all the suffering you have been through. P.1277. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.1.

The holy wine contains elements that symbolize the love of the True Parents. It also must contain something that symbolizes blood. So when you drink it, you become one with the love of the True Parents, and also with the blood. This is what the holy wine incorporates. P.1277. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.1.



How is the holy wine made? It is wine that symbolizes earth, sea, heaven, and everything in them. The holy wine contains three kinds of wine. It also contains other elements that represent all the things of creation. P.1277. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.1.

However, in the case of the second generation, there is no need for the holy wine ceremony. Their roots are different. Your roots are lodged in the fallen world, but theirs are not. P.1278. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.1.

When a prominent person comes to officiate at a wedding alone, like an odd shoe, that person is conducting the wedding as the archangel. P.1279. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.2.

This Holy Wedding Ceremony being conducted today has been the hope and ideal of God. It is the Holy Wedding Ceremony that God had planned for Adam and Eve after they fully matured. It existed in His heart as the ideal of creation, and so, conducting this ceremony is truly a historic event. You must realize that this is the first time such a ceremony has been held since the time of creation. P.1280. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.2.

Forty days after receiving the Blessing, you need to go through the ceremony for substantial restoration, which lasts three days. P.1280. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.3.

On the first day of the three-day ceremony, the realm of the Old Testament Age and the position of fallen Adam are restored. On the second day, the position of Jesus in the New Testament Age is restored through indemnity. On the third day, the groom, representing Jesus, re-creates the bride. From there, you can begin again on the right path. P.1281. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.3.

Eve was supposed to perfect Adam, but instead she made him fall. P.1281. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.3.

The woman, in the position of Eve, must give birth to her husband as Adam. She must raise him through the formation stage. Then, as a representative of Jesus, she must raise him through the growth stage. Finally, in the completion stage, she must raise him to become Adam who is untainted by the Fall. Only after that can the husband claim his right as the husband of Eve and love her. This is the process that needs to be followed. A confession is necessary at this point. Only in the era of the Second Coming can he become the husband. When he can stand in the position of perfected Adam, he can claim the position of the Blessing, that is, the position of the bridegroom. P.1281. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.3.

In order to set the condition for her giving birth through love, the act of loving must be carried out in the opposite way from how it was done in the past. The woman is in the upper position and the man is in the lower position. P.1282. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.3.

When carrying out the three-day ceremony, the woman prays first. In order to give birth to Adam in the formation stage, one needs to be blessed. Only then can one enter the era of Jesus. Then the ritual is repeated, with the words, "Please bestow on me the blessing of giving birth to the second Adam, who is like Jesus!" With the second birth, the husband advances to the position representing Jesus, from where he can reach the position of perfection. Only then can he achieve the subject position of the husband. P.1282. left. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.3.

The holy wine ceremony sets the condition that you have been born through three providential mothers Eve, Mary and True Mother. The holy wine contains the blood of indemnity. By drinking the holy wine, you are purified internally, and by wiping yourself with the holy handkerchief, you are purified externally. P.1282. right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.3.

"I have received the Blessing, and that's enough! I'll go to the Kingdom of Heaven even if I don't do anything now!" If you think like this, and sit still, doing nothing, you will go to ruin. P.1283. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.1.

The husband and wife must re-create each other. If the Blessed families of the Unification Church forget that, you will still have to walk the path of filling in the bottomless pit that exists between the resentful husband and wife and all will come to ruin. P.1284. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.1.

It is your responsibility to restore the family, and in order to do so, you must follow the commands of True Parents absolutely. You should not argue with True Parents. The name of True Parents can settle down in your families only when your personal concepts disappear. If this does not come to pass, you cannot restore ideal families. P.1284. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.1.

What should you do to receive the love of the True Parents? Love everything that is loved by True Parents. Only then can you receive love from them. In terms of a family, if a son wants to be loved by his parents, he needs to know he can only receive love from his parents when he loves everything they cherish. P.1285. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.1.

When taking after True Parents, you only (need to) resemble the most essential parts. By these essential parts, I am talking about winning over Satan and loving God absolutely. That is all you need to take after. P.1285. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.1.

Organs of both sexes could have been made in pointed shapes or flat shapes, but why were they shaped so differently? It is all for the objective partner. P.1286. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

The unity of man and woman, convex and concave, is the place where God is perfected. That is where woman who is one half, and man who is the other half, are perfected. The land of settlement, where the ideal of God's love can be perfected, begins from the place where concave and convex unite and a relationship of the first love is established after marriage. P.1287. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

If a woman does not have a man, she is in absolute darkness. If a man does not have a woman, he is in absolute darkness. P.1287. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

What is the best place a man can worship? Is it the face of a woman? Is it her breasts? Is it her body? Where is it? There is only one place in which the concave part can come together with the convex part. P.1287. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

The place where two lives come together as one, centered on love, and the place where the blood of man and woman become one, is the sexual organ. You must know that this place is more precious than sons and daughters, husband and even God. It is a place that is more precious than your children, husband, and even parents. P.1289. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

The sexual organ is more important than the head. You cannot find the origin of true love in your head. You cannot find the origin of true life in your head. You cannot find the origin of true lineage in your head. P.1289. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

Through my strenuous efforts to find the answer to the fundamental problems of humankind and the origin of the universe, I discovered the answer within the sexual organ. After discovering this, I thought the whole matter through and found that the harmony of heaven and earth was swirling there. It is truly an amazing fact. P.1290. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

The perfection of human beings, who will be able to achieve the sublime ideal of love, is only possible when they take responsibility for love. P.1290. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

The horizontal relationship of love between husband and wife is different from the vertical relationship of love between parents and children, in that once it is shared with others, it becomes ruined. This is because, by virtue of the principle of creation, it becomes necessary for husband and wife to form an absolute unity in love. Human beings have the responsibility to live for the sake of their spouses absolutely. P.1292. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

Human beings are always in need of stimulation. Happiness cannot be achieved without it. There must be some kind of stimulation. Just as the food you eat every day tastes different and refreshing if you eat it when you are hungry, the love between a husband and wife must also always feel refreshing. The more a husband and wife see each other, the more they should want to be with each other, even all day long. P.1293. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

There can be no doubt that the purpose for God's endeavors in trying to restore humanity is so He can find His own happiness. P.1294-5. Ch.1. Sec.3.4.

In a person's lifetime, the most important moments are when he is born, when he gets married, and when he dies. P.1295. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.4.

The true love relationship between parents and children is vertical, the true love relationship between husband and wife is horizontal, and the true love in the relationship between siblings is in the position of front and back. P.1296. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.4.

The ideal of the creation of the universe can be realized only when three generations live with a harmonious and happy love within one house. Needless to say, the husband and wife must love each other, but the family can only live in harmony and happiness when the parents also pray for their children with love and look after them devotedly. P.1297. left. Ch.1. Sec.3.4.

When the parents and siblings unite into one, and even the cousins and second cousins unite into one, centering on the grandfather, then the completion of three generations can be achieved. When such a love in the realm of the tribe is established here on earth, and united into one with God, the whole world will become a world of love in union with God, that is, the Kingdom of Heaven. P.1297. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.4.

Nowadays, I feel that I must teach you about the norms of a family, that is, the norms you must follow in your lives as the families of the Kingdom of Heaven. However, the people who are supposed to walk the path of restoration have leaders who can teach them centering on the Divine Principle, and so they should learn about this from them. The time has passed for True Father to take responsibility for such problems in person. P.1299. right. Ch.1. Sec.3.4.

The third realm of Israel must be established on earth by connecting the spiritual foundations of the first and second Israels. In order to do so, the returning Lord must find and set up a family (Adam's family) that represents the first Israel, a second family (Noah's family) that represents the second Israel, and a third family (Jacob's family) that represents the third Israel. Therefore, the 36 Blessed Couples must become the ancestors of humanity. P.1300. left. Ch.1. Sec.4.1.

If you want to become citizens of the third Israel connected to the Unification Church, you must receive the Blessing. In the past, at the time of Abraham, one had to be circumcised to become a citizen of Israel; and in the time of Jesus, one had to be baptized. It is the same today. In the Unification Church, one cannot become a citizen of the third Israel without receiving the Blessing. However, in receiving the Blessing one must fulfill certain conditions that are neither simple nor easy. I continuously exerted myself and devoted my whole life in fulfilling the necessary foundations for these Blessings. P.1300. right. Ch.2. Sec.1.1.

The Blessed Families of the Unification Church are not in the position of the original Israel, waiting and yearning for the Messiah through the tradition of Judaism. Instead, they are one step ahead, because they have already received the Messiah and have formed a new tribe. P.1302-3. Ch.2. Sec.1.2.

Abraham established Israel through the offering of sacrifices, but the Unification Church is creating Israel through the Blessing. Therefore, entering the third Israel is possible only through the Blessing. P.1303. left. Ch.2. Sec.1.3.

Christianity failed to stand in the position of both physical and spiritual perfection. In other words, it achieved the realm of the second Israel spiritually but not physically. As a consequence, we must additionally achieve the substantial standard. The day on which we achieve this is the day of the Second Coming. P.1303. right. Ch.2. Sec.1.3.

Even under such circumstances, God is carrying out His providence with Korea representing Israel, and the United States representing Rome. When these two nations unite into one, the foundation upon which the whole world can be made into one can be achieved. The foundation of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth can be achieved through the absorption of the communist world by the worldwide foundation of Christianity. P.1304. left. Ch.2. Sec.1.3.

That is why the returning Lord is responsible for uniting the communist and democratic worlds into one. How far have we come? We have already achieved the worldwide foundation. The Unification Church has already laid down the foundation of the kingdom on the levels of the individual, family, tribe, people, nation and world. Because of this, the five races of the world have now come together as one great family. The people of the third Israel are those who can own the Kingdom of God on the earth and in the spirit world based upon the foundation of a united world. So, we have now become the people of the third Israel. P.1304. left. Ch.2. Sec.1.3.

The 36 Couples represent the ancestors who lived during the two thousand years from the time of Adam to the time of Abraham. That is why there must be Cain and Abel in front of the 36 Couples. The 72 Couples were thus designated to occupy these positions. The 120 Couples were set up to represent all providential numbers, based on the number twelve. Of the 124 Couples, four couples were previously married from before. Their Blessing was for the purpose of restoring both the position of the fallen families and the family that Jesus had tried to establish. P.1305. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.1.

Just as Jesus became the victorious leader on behalf of his Father in the position of the Son of God, all of you must fulfill your responsibilities in the position of the son. P.1305. right. Ch.2. Sec.2.1.

If it is the 120 Couples, then every one of them must come together and form a team, and this goes for the 430 Couples as well. You must understand that the couples blessed in the holy wedding ceremony made their entrance as the resurrected central couples, indemnifying the failures of all previous couples in history. P.1307. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.1.

The returning Lord must restore through indemnity the position of Adam's family. Therefore, he must seek out the families that can represent the families of Adam, Noah and Abraham, and set them up as the ancestors. In order to do so, he must first find 12 couples to represent Adam's family, 12 couples to represent Noah's family, and 12 couples to represent Abraham's family, thereby establishing a vertical foundation on behalf of the ancestors. That is why I organized the 36 Couples. I sought out and set up the 72 Couples to represent Cain and Abel centering on the ancestors represented by the 36 Couples. The 120 Couples represent the leaders of 120 nations around the world. P.1308. right. Ch.2. Sec.2.1.

The nation of Korea represents the world, and so we need to transcend all the tribes in this nation. In doing so, I am not putting the Moon tribe before others. I should open the gates through which all tribes in this nation, regardless of surname, can come in contact with God freely.

The mass holy weddings of the Unification Church are not performed to solve the marriage problems of independent individuals. The Blessed Families must eliminate everything that is in conflict with heaven, and which has been inherited from the numerous ancestors, races and nations of past history. In order to do so, they must be a united group, one that will take up the burden of their mission in the present era that we are living in. The 36 Couples must unite into one team, and the 430 Couples must come together and form a team. P.1311. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.2.

The three-year course required an all-out offensive. What came next after the Blessing of the 777 Couples can only be described as an all-out offensive focusing on Korea. That is why during the three-year course all our Blessed Couples were mobilized. Did we mobilize the 777 Couples at that time? We even mobilized the 777 Couples. Every one of the couples left their children at home and went out to serve for the benefit of their nation. It seems like only yesterday that everyone set forth, crying and pledging that they would save their nation. In order to fill up the pit of suffering in this nation, they handed over their beloved sons and daughters, wrapped in blankets, across the fences and into the houses of their opposing parents. They just left them there and set out on this path, having nothing to eat for many days on end. P.1313-4. Ch.2. Sec.2.3.

During the three years from 1970, we even mobilized the 777 Couples, didn't we? Didn't you do the same? This was worldwide. We mobilized them in order to undergo hardships for the sake of the nation during the three years. What this means is that there is no family on earth, representing the nation or the world, who can be a match for the families of the Unification Church. Every family must become like the families in the Unification Church. How we were criticized during those three years! Since their mothers and fathers opposed them, the couples wrapped their babies in blankets and left them on the doorsteps of their parents' houses at night, before setting out. Why did they have to do that? It was because they had to set the condition that they loved their nation more than their own sons and daughters.

In order to do so, some of them even left their children in orphanages. Some husbands split up with their wives. After blessing them, instead of letting them live happily ever after, I made them throw away what little they had in their households, even pots and pans, and turned them out of their own homes. I did all this, so that the Blessed Families of the Unification Church from various tribes could go out to the nation as representatives of their tribes and restore them through indemnity.

At first, we were opposed nationwide, but in the end, the circumstances were such that the same people were heard to say, "If we want to defend ourselves against Kim Il-sung and save our nation, we must become like the members of the Unification Church." We set an example for others, teaching them that if you want to save your nation, you must do what

we did, and serve the nation by sacrificing your wives and children. At the end of the three years, the people who at first had opposed us, welcomed us. The fact that they did this signified the restoration of the Cain and Abel relationship. P.1314. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.3.

Up to the time of the Blessing of the 777 Couples, I insisted that they needed to restore at least three spiritual sons and daughters. However, I have not asked this of those who have received the Blessing since then. P.1315. right. Ch.2. Sec.2.3.

The 6000 Couples connect the Christians who are in the vertical position with the non-Christian people worldwide; in other words, they connect the vertical Christians with the horizontal Cain world. The fact that I have connected them through the 6000 Couples shows that the era of the satanic world attacking the Blessed Families has passed. P.1317. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.3.

In 1952, we lost the original worldwide Blessing era, in which we would have been able to hold the Blessing on a worldwide scale centering on True Parents. Forty years later, in 1992, we were finally able to enter the worldwide Blessing era, and so the 30,000 Couples Blessing was held. P.1318. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.4.

On April 10, 1992, I blessed religious leaders from eight nations including Islamic countries, and thereby set the condition of having the Muslims come into unity with us. You did not know of this, did you? There was no one who withdrew from the Blessing. Even the Muslims took part in it. The Blessing of 30,000 couples was a truly international Blessing. Chinese, Koreans, and even North Korean youths came to our church, attracted by the Blessing. They were converted from Communism, were educated, and some even received the Blessing. Simply said, the Blessing has now spread to the whole world. P.1320. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.4.

I will open the Blessing of the 30,000 Couples to people in general. They will receive the Blessing after being educated for forty days only, and then the couples will walk the three-year course. Even those who have done nothing to deserve the Blessing will receive the benefits. Therefore, all of you should set new traditions that will be adored and cherished by the people in your neighborhood, and make them exclaim, "That is what a Blessed Family is like!" Then the newly Blessed Families will be able to come to your family and unite together like the twelve tribes of Israel. In this way, you will create an environment similar to the one surrounding me, and people will say, "Oh, I wish I could have a meal with the people in that family!"

Once you become the central figure in the course of fulfilling the duties of love in which you give and give, and forget that you have given, just as God has done, the environment surrounding you would never be like a desert, even if you wanted it to be. Then the day will come in which the cheers of a united people and the cries for a united South and North Korea will rock the world. Soon the South and North will be liberated, and the members of the Unification Church will shout three cheers of *Mansei* with rapturous joy. P.1320-1. Ch.2. Sec.2.4.

From now on, a 3.6 Million Couples Blessing won't even be a problem. There are hundreds of millions of Hindus in India, and more than 70 million Muslims in Pakistan. Both of these nations will claim that they can accomplish 3.6 million couples on their own. P.1324. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.5.

Now that we have performed the 360,000 Couples Blessing, the next stage is to hold the 3.6 Million Couples Blessing in three years time, and 36 Million Couples Blessing three years after that. After these Blessings are held, do you think you'll be able to find a neighborhood in the world where there isn't at least one Blessed Couple? There will be Blessed Families everywhere. Then, we will achieve great power.

In such a nation, boundaries separating towns would disappear. It would be no problem to connect all the places of the world. Then you will be able to sit in your own home, and make friends with people from all the nations of the world on the phone. P.1325. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.5.

What the United Nations needs right now is the institution of True Parents, and the establishment of a United Nations for women and a United Nations for the youth. P.1327. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.6.

As a result of this, just as anyone in the world, regardless of tribe, people or nation, can receive the Blessing, those in the spirit world and even in the realm of the archangel, can now receive the Blessing. P.1328. right. Ch.2. Sec.2.6.

If we accomplish the Blessing of 3.6 million couples before August 9, 1997, at the age of 77, I can, on July 7 at 7 minutes and 7 seconds past 7 o'clock in the morning, declare the Blessing of 36 million couples. Anyone can participate in this Blessing. It is the liberation. Once we have accomplished the Blessing of 36 million couples, we will enter a new age, in which the spirits from the spirit world will come down to earth and bring everyone to receive the Blessing. P.1329. left. Ch.2. Sec.2.6.

That is why as soon as we have accomplished the Blessing of 3.6 million couples, I can bequeath to Heung-jin and Dae Mo Nim the power to bless those in the spirit world. P.1329. right. Ch.2. Sec.2.6.

Once I have blessed 3.6 million couples, I will only have to bless a small number of people from that time on. Through the Blessing, all such relationships will be perfected, and those above the age of Mother at the time of her Holy Blessing will be liberated. That is why currently I am blessing even those who are 19, or 18 years of age. P.1329. right. Ch.2. Sec.2.6.

What have I been doing until now? I blessed the Three Couples first. Did I bless them or not? I did. I would not have been able to hold my own Holy Wedding in 1960 if I had not first laid a foundation through these three Couples. Before

receiving Mother in holy matrimony, I first found spouses for the chosen three, then conducted my own Holy Wedding, after which I blessed the three betrothed Couples. That was how I followed the path of the Principle. P.1331. left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

When you look at my family, you can see that I have children in the vertical position. On the horizontal foundation, who among the True Children represents the position of the horizontal Abel? It is Heung-jin. He is the second son. In order to establish the 36 Couples, people representing Jesus' three main disciples had to be secured, restoring the number three. The first three, the archangel-type couples, fulfilled this role. After the number three had been regained, 36 couples representing Adam's family, Noah's family, and Jacob's family could come forth. The first of the three Couples, who themselves represent the 36 Couples, was that of Kim Won-pil. Providential history cannot allow just anyone to stand in that position. He must have a suitable ancestral background aligned with the dispensation in the spirit world; otherwise, he cannot stand in the position of the eldest son. The one who fulfilled these requirements was Kim Won-pil. The one who occupied the position of the second son was Eu Hyo-won and the third was Kim Young-hwi. P. 1331-2. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

Centering on the three representative couples, twelve had to be raised up. These twelve were to be entrusted with a historic mission; however, only twelve would not do. In addition, twelve couples representing the past and twelve couples representing the future were chosen to establish the 36 Couples. The 36 Couples are the compression of all the disconnected ancestors of the two-thousand year history of ten generations from Adam's family to Noah's family, another ten generations from Noah's family to Jacob's family, and Jacob's twelve sons. P. 1332 left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

The 36 Couples consist of three groups of twelve. The first group symbolizes the Old Testament Age of marrying without God's permission. The second group symbolizes the New Testament Age of wishing to be married in God's chosen land. However, with the death of Jesus on the cross, this wish was not fulfilled and so the age became one of the bride awaiting her groom. The third group symbolizes the Completed Testament Age, an era of perfection, and of wishing for the beginning of God's family.

Today we are passing through the providence of restoration symbolizing Jacob's victory. Accordingly, I need to restore through indemnity the era of the servant and the realm of the adopted child and realize the era of the true child. The 36 Couples were established in order to restore these three eras symbolically. P. 1332. left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

The 36 Couples are all related to the number twelve. The ten generations from Adam to Noah add up to twelve by including Cain and Abel. The ten generations from Noah to Abraham also add up to twelve by including Isaac and Jacob. P. 1334. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

Who are the 36 Couples? The first group within the 36 Couples consists of those who had married as they pleased, who were brought into the presence of God, and connected to Him through the Blessing. Next, the second group of couples consisted of those who were engaged but who did not marry before the Blessing. Matching and blessing people is not something I do casually. Why? Because these couples are for the sake of the salvation of all humankind. The third group is for virgin men and women. All already married couples should absolutely obey the first group of the 36 Blessed Couples. You will understand this more clearly when you go to the spirit world. The second group should absolutely obey the third group of couples.

When the time comes for God's will to be accomplished on earth, it will be the third group of the 36 Couples who will become the center. You are hearing this for the first time from me. So for whom would the Lord come first? He is not coming to see the already married couples. He is not coming to see people with failed relationships from the past. He is coming to find virgin men and women. P. 1335. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

The couples made up of virgin men and women whom I matched and blessed are standing on a level upon which they can connect to me directly. Hence, from this day onwards, when it comes to establishing the family structure, the center will always be the couples who were blessed as virgin men and women. Bearing this in mind, all of you must recognize the order of family groups from now on. P. 1335. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

What is the responsibility of the 36 Couples? They are to satisfy all historical indemnity conditions up to the present time. In other words, they must become the perfect protective fence that can exclude Satan completely. P. 1336. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

Among the 36 Couples divided into three groups of twelve, respectively representing Adam's, Noah's, and Jacob's families, which group is the most precious? It is the third. In the future, you will have to serve them. At the moment, we are not distinguishing them from each other because the time to do so has not yet come, but that does not mean they are the same. They are very different. P. 1336. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

The 33 Couples were wedded in three phases: the first at dawn, the second during the day, and the third at night. P. 1339. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.3.

Did everything until now go wrong just because of the first ancestors' failure to fulfill their responsibility? No. They did err, but the brothers Cain and Abel also did wrong. Thus, the 72 Couples were established to stand in the position of the brothers, Cain and Abel, in front of the 36 Couples. P. 1340. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

Where did conflict begin? It began between Adam and Eve's sons Cain and Abel, who thus destroyed the world and made it the way it is today; that is to say, one in which all their descendants are in constant struggle with one other. P. 1341. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

The 36 Couples symbolize Adam's family and are in the position of ancestors; only when they stand on the foundation of Cain and Abel's united families can they attain the position of parents. The 72 Couples are twice the number of the 36 Couples because they are in the position of Cain and Abel. P. 1341. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

Who are the 72 Couples? Some translations of the Bible state that Jesus had seventy-two disciples, and others, seventy. Originally, 72 is the correct number. Centering on the twelve tribes and the number six (six united representatives per tribe), two times six is twelve and one times six is six. Multiplying them gives us seventy-two. If it were seventy disciples, the numbers would not have added up properly. Hence, the correct number is seventy-two. P. 1341. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

The 120 Couples signify the high priests of nations in the world and represent the twelve tribes. They are the branches of these tribes that have spread out into the world. P. 1342. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

Why was Jesus unable to establish the Kingdom of Heaven? It was because his clan and twelve apostles didn't help him. He attempted to build a bridge that would connect with the nation through his clan, twelve apostles, and seventy disciples, but it collapsed. He therefore could not establish the foundation on the family, clan, or church level during his life on earth.

The next problem was that the seventy disciples did not unite with Jesus. They represented the twelve tribes and the seventy elders of Israel. The correct number, actually, should be 72, not 70. If six people were chosen from each of the twelve tribes, the total would be seventy-two. P. 1343. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

The mistake Cain committed by not being obedient to Abel, which led to their fatal conflict, has not been indemnified by providential figures of the past, and so the process of restoration has been prolonged until now. In order to restore this mistake completely, the foundation of Cain's obedience to Abel must be indemnified before each ancestral couple. The 72 Couples, therefore, came into existence for this purpose. P. 1344. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

The 120 Couples, representing Jesus' 120 followers, stand on the global level. As the representatives of the nations of the world, the 120 Couples are the foundation upon which the global indemnity condition can be met. By establishing these couples, the basis upon which God can come unto the world can be secured. Hence, we can say that the day on which the number of member states of the United Nations exceeded 120 marked the beginning of the Last Days. P. 1344. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 3.1.

Jesus shed his blood on the cross because the seventy-two disciples and twelve apostles totaling eighty-four were disunited. Hence, every one of you must substantially restore eighty-four people through indemnity. Only on such a foundation can you lead married lives. P. 1345. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 3.1.

The 120 Couples typify the world. This is why I designated 120 holy grounds in forty nations worldwide in 1965. P. 1348. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 3.2.

What are the 430 Couples? Are there not hundreds of surnames in Korea, such as Park or Kim? In like manner, there are many surnames in other nations across the world as well, and the path through which all of them can be connected to the center of God's providence has been opened up by the 430 Couples Blessing. With regard to the 430 Couples, there are actually 430 from Korea forming a reciprocal relationship with another forty-three from Japan, the United States, and Europe. By this means, the world's five races have been brought together through the 43 Couples, corresponding to the 430. P. 1351. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 4.1.

The path through which everyone can pass through the door of the Blessing and come together in one place should be opened for all people of faith, even if they live at the very ends of the earth. Such is the significance of the Unification Church's large weddings: by forging global connections through the 430 Couples, it has developed into a worldwide race of people. It is not just for Koreans. The fact that I connected the 430 Couples to the 43 Couples on the foundation of the family on the world level signifies the birth of a new race transcending ethnicity and nationality. That is how I see it. P. 1353. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 4.1.

Through the 430 Couples, the whole nation should be connected to the Blessing, and this connection should expand to include the whole world, which is why I blessed the 43 Couples as the worldwide counterparts of the 430 Couples. That is the condition: through these Blessings, the 430 Couples can connect to any tribe in Korea, whereas the 43 Couples, as representatives of the world, can connect to any nation. P. 1354. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 4.1.

When blessing the 430 Couples, I told them to become tribal messiahs. That did not mean that they should go off and live happily by themselves. In other words, I had given them a mission similar to that of Jesus and the Holy Spirit; that is, to become the tribal messiahs working to save their tribes as the substantial embodiments of the resurrected Jesus and the Holy Spirit. That means they should fulfill the mission of tribal messiahs, not as spirits but as physical people. P. 1354. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 4.2.

The instruction issued to the 430 Couples I blessed in 1968 was to become tribal messiahs. They must fulfill this mission. Just as I organized the 36 Couples in our church, blessed members having the surname of Kim, for example, are to likewise organize 36 couples within their Kim clan. If they cannot, they should become the ancestors of at least twelve couples. The way to do this is to form trinities with their children, since they are the parents, and thus establish the standard of tribal messiahship. P. 1355. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 4.2.

the 430 Couples are the messianic families of their tribes. What that means is that they are like the families of Christ at his Second Advent to their tribes. The 36, 72, and 120 Couples are part of me. These three groups of couples correspond to the vertical standard, whereas the 430 Couples have been established horizontally in all directions. Hence, they enter the

realm of tribal messiahs, which is why I told them all, “Be tribal messiahs!” As I have already restored the 36 and 72 Couples, who form the center, as well as the 120 Couples, all you need to do now is to restore 120 couples per Blessed Family. Then everything can be indemnified both vertically and horizontally. P. 1355. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 4.2.

The 777 Couples, formed by young men and women from ten nations, were blessed in 1970 in order to create new families and new tribes based on God's love, transcending national boundaries and racial differences in pioneering the way of His will for the world. Thus, a new global nation was being prepared for Christ at his Second Advent, as well as the requisite personnel who could serve any nation and any citizenry in accordance with his plan. P. 1356. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 5.1.

The 777 Couples represent the whole world. The three sevens refer to formation, growth, and completion. I prepared the global family structure for us to enter the transracial era by blessing the 777 Couples in 1970. Thus, any of the 777 Couples, including the Japanese, could take the place of any of the 36, 72, 124, or 430 Couples who deviate from their position. P. 1356. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 5.1.

The 777 Couples were blessed on October 21, 1970. They came from ten nations and must therefore relate to the world. They are the “Three-seven” couples. There is no racial discrimination among them whether they are Japanese or Americans. Everyone must create unity; only then can all nations in the world follow Korea into heaven. P. 1359. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 5.1.

It was the last Blessing, which is why you are the 777 Couples. The date was set for October 21st because three times seven is twenty-one. This is the final crucial moment. From now on, I will not have to conduct the Blessing myself. P. 1359. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 5.1.

In the 1970s, we must restore seven thousand years of history through indemnity and establish the dignity of Adam in Korea. Hence, we must buy a house. If you do not buy me a home, you would not be fulfilling your responsibility. Thus, I had no choice but to establish and bless the 777 Couples. By doing so, I set the condition for them to buy the best house as well as the best car in Korea. P. 1362. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 5.1.

The 1800 Couples will be the last Blessing group in creating this movement. The fact that I have restored 1,800 couples from the satanic world signifies that I have surpassed the realm of the tribe. The victory I achieved on the national level is the starting point of the path leading to the world. P. 1364. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 6.1.

The 6000 Couples connected Christians in the vertical position with non-Christian peoples worldwide, in other words, the vertical Christians with the horizontal Cain world. P. 1366. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 7.

With the accomplishment of the 6000 Couples Blessing, God's wrath on earth has finally been appeased. Thanks to the 6000 Couples, even those in prison or hell were able to receive the Blessing. The number 6,000 opened the gates not only to the Cain world but even to hell on earth and in the spirit world. P. 1367. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 7.

The 6000 Couples are the form of the satanic number six reclaimed on the global level. Did you know that? Beginning with my own Blessing in 1960, I went on to bless the first 3 Couples, then the 33, 72, 124, 430, 777, 1800, and 6000 Couples. Since this last Blessing was the ninth, it led to the most persecution. That is why the 6000 Couples underwent more hardships than any other Blessed Couples. P. 1367. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 7.

Didn't Adam and Eve get married? That is why indemnification takes place through the path of marriage. P. 1368. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 7.

You know, on October 30 of the year before last, I married more than 6,500 Korean and Japanese people. Many Japanese were matched to Korean men and women, and Koreans were matched to Japanese men and women. P. 1369. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 8.

Twenty years from now, people like us will be occupying most of the earth and we will have established one world, one nation. Such a time is coming. P. 1372. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 9.

You must understand that the 30,000 Couples Blessing should be accepted as one of the greatest and most historic events ever. How great is the historic background behind it? The event involves the whole world. After conducting the 30,000 Couples Blessing, there is no need for me to perform any more Blessing ceremonies. P. 1372. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 9.

Hence, through their Blessing, the Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven has been completely opened. P. 1373. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 9.

The photographs of the 30,000 Couples Blessing are not displayed in the Blue House (Office of the President of South Korea), but they are hanging on the office walls of Kim Il-sung and Kim Jong-il. Was I right in doing that or not? As a result, the gates to China and Russia were opened. Now all that remains for me to do is to open the gates to North Korea. P. 1379. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 9.

Kim Il-sung promised me that he would allow the reunion of the dispersed families of all displaced people from North Korea. He promised a North-South interchange. He proposed, “Bring all the 30,000 couples to the North and we will welcome them with open arms!” It was summer at that time. Do you know the Songdo Beach Resort, where you cross fields of pine trees and sweetbriars to reach a white sandy beach lined by endless rows of pine trees? He said we could put up as many tents as we needed on the white beach and said, “If you want, we will welcome all of the 30,000 couples to North Korea!” It was the government in the South that was opposed to this idea. P. 1379-80. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 9.

Since we reclaimed 360,000 couples from the satanic realm, the satanic world has fallen to pieces. Now the families in the secular world are bound to disintegrate. Once this happens, the Blessed Families will become the mainstream, and everyone will get to know that the family ideal I teach will not only bring liberation to humanity, but also show us the shortest route to world peace; P. 1387. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 10.

As we are currently living at such a time, I, with my prerogative, can bless even those who have done nothing to deserve it. P. 1389. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 10.

We reached the formation stage on the global level through the 30,000 Couples Blessing and the growth stage through the 360,000 Couples Blessing. This is the second stage. Since the first ancestors fell while still in the second stage, it is in this stage that we need to bring together the spiritual and physical worlds based on the family. By bringing together my parents and elder brother, I could establish a foundation of a trinity of mother, elder brother, and children. Not only that, in addition, Adam's family and Mother's family could be blessed and the sons and daughters of that family brought together. Only after passing through the three generations in this way can my sons and daughters, as Abel, be united with your couples as Cain, centering on the True Parents. Thus, at 3:00 a.m., on the day before the Blessing Ceremony of the 360,000 Couples was scheduled to take place, the Blessing of the physical parents of the True Parents needed to be performed. That shows how complicated everything is. A Blessing Ceremony held like this was not the originally intended ideal blessing of Adam and Eve. The right of kingship still remains to be restored. There is no nation that we can call our own! Nevertheless, the satanic world is heading for complete ruin. P. 1389. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 10.

I blessed my mother, Choong-mo nim, and True Mother's mother, Dae-mo nim, and my elder brother, Dae-hyeong nim. It is part of the preparation for blessing those who have passed on to the spirit world. It took place at 3:00 a.m. the day before the 360,000 Couples Blessing was held. You don't realize how complicated it is. By combining all these events and flying high the banner, I am paving the path for there to be no conflict between God and Satan, or between the spiritual and physical worlds. That is the path of restoration through indemnity. P. 1390. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 10.

Even those who passed away before the True Parents had come can now reach the position of being able to receive the Blessing from them and live as Blessed Couples on the same level as those on earth. The Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples represents such a historic realm of liberation. P. 1390. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 11.1.

You know that the 3.6 million Couples will establish the liberated realm of the Blessing that is open to anyone, don't you? Wouldn't murderers, thieves, and all kinds of crooks be included? The whole place will abound with robbers and cheats. How long would it normally take to make them all repent? They would enter the spirit world carrying the sins of thousands of years on their backs, and even if they repented for those sins for thousands upon thousands of years, they would still not be forgiven. Only through the power of true love can they be forgiven. P. 1391. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 11.1.

The time when I must perform the Blessing Ceremony for the liberation of the spirit world is coming. I will begin to do that after the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples. We are entering an era when those who have passed on to the spirit world can be called back and united with their spouses in the physical world. In this way, even hell can be liberated. P. 1392. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 11.1.

After the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples has been accomplished, I will instruct my son Heung-jin and Dae-mo nim to carry out Blessing ceremonies in the spirit world on behalf of the True Parents. P. 1392. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 11.1.

Since God set the standard based upon which He could not intervene in the Garden of Eden, He cannot intervene now. In the Last Days, Satan will try to destroy all families, but eventually all traces of his lineage will dry up. P. 1193. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 11.1.

In our past daily life we celebrated in the presence of God and the True Parents only on Sundays. With the declaration of Chil Il Jeol (Seven-One Day), the era of God's all-immanence and supreme authority, and the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, we can free ourselves from the realm of lamentation, in which all the things of creation have been lamenting. We will now be entering the world of the ideal and the age of justification by attendance, where we will be in constant attendance of God and the True Parents every day of the week, from Monday to Sunday, from morning till night, eating, sleeping, and leading our daily lives together with them. P. 1394. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 11.1.

The next thing we must overcome is nationalism. Based upon the Family and Tribal Federations, we are entering the era of the National Federation. Our goal is to have twenty four nations join and work together. P. 1395. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 11.1.

Even without detailed explanations about the Blessing or where to go to receive it, the whole world will know that our Blessing ideal is the only means of liberating the world and they will have no choice but to listen. That is because the 3.6 Million Couples will continuously go out and convey the truth to others about this. P. 1395. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 11.1.

Once we have completed the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, there will be no need for the Unification Church to hold any more Blessing ceremonies. Religion will disappear from the world. When you think of me, what preaching of mine comes to your mind? What am I trying to say now? It is that religion came into existence in order to discipline the body due to the Fall. Thus, all religions will disappear. What is it that you need to do? You need to form families and a nation through which you can attend God. That is the ideal of creation. P. 1396. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 11.1.

After the Blessing of 3.6 Million Couples, it will be a downhill ride; descent is easy. That will be the 36 million Couples: the growth stage. What follows is the Blessing of 360 Million Couples; by then we would reach level terrain at the bottom of the hill. Descending there, we can return to the state of Adam's family before the Fall. By achieving this, we are entering the age when parents will bless their children. From this point on, you can perform the preliminary Blessing



ceremonies yourselves. Recognized as John the Baptist families, you will be able to do that in the name of the True Parents. P. 1400. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 12.

Once the Blessing of 360 Million Couples is under way, we will enter the era of the realm of the fourth Adam, in which there will be no need for indemnification. Thus, we will enter the era in which the parents can bless their children in Eden on behalf of God. In this way, the direct pathway leading to heaven can be paved, along which blessed members can lead the relatives they have blessed and reach all humankind. P. 1401. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 12.

Blessing 360 million couples on earth would mark the beginning of the Blessing in the spirit world. P. 1402. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 12.

Until now, many elderly and middle-aged people and young adults have been blessed; now the time has come for us to focus on the adolescents. P. 1402. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 12.

We are talking about the cosmic expansion of the Blessing. Where should it be held first: in the spiritual or physical world? Didn't Eve make love with the archangel first? We must hasten to liberate the spirit world. The era of the Blessing of 360 Million Couples signifies the transition from the global level into relating with the spirit world, making it possible for spirit people to be brought to and blessed at the boundary between the two worlds. Among the people blessed in this last ceremony, were there Mafiosi or not? Were murderers included? How about yakuza or gangsters? All kinds of people were included in that Blessing. P. 1403. Right. Ch.3. Sec.12.

Unification Church members are to offer three-tenths, not tithes. Through this tradition, everyone should offer their assets, nations, and land by connecting to the offering based on the number three. P. 1403. Right. Ch.3. Sec.12.

In the spirit world, there are Blessing groups of fifteen billion and fifty billion parents, brothers and sisters following on from a first group of twenty billion spirit people. Here on earth, the 360 million couples in fact more than 400 million couples who are being blessed in today's ceremony number more than 800 million individuals. Based on an average of four family members per household, the total number of family members related to these newly Blessed Couples must be over three billion. P. 1405. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 12.

At the Blessing ceremonies, twenty-four people comprising twelve pairs of groomsmen and bridesmaids are positioned to form an entryway signifying formation, growth, and completion. They represent the number three and Jesus' twelve apostles.

After walking seven steps, the Blessing participants need to make three bows, signifying that they have passed through the formation stage. This symbolizes the course of history from the time of Adam until now. P. 1407. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 13.

The True Parents sprinkle holy water during the Blessing Ceremony to set the condition that you have been restored through indemnity and that you have gone beyond the foundation prepared by the ancestors in the spirit world. The holy wine ceremony sets the condition that you have been reborn through three providential mothers. Contained in the holy wine is the blood of indemnification. By drinking it, you are cleansed internally, and by wiping yourself with the holy handkerchief, you are cleansed externally. P. 1408. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 13.

There is a problem with the already married couples: if they were to go to the spirit world, they would see that they are different from other Blessed Couples. In the spirit world, the Blessing received by single virgin men and women is very different from that of already married couples. There are three levels in the spirit world, just as today's society is divided into upper, middle, and lower classes. Among the 36 Couples divided into three groups of twelve respectively representing Adam's, Noah's, and Jacob's families, which group is the most precious? It is the third. In the future, you will have to serve them. At the moment we are not distinguishing them from each other because the time to do so has not yet come, but that does not mean they are the same. They are very different. P. 1408. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 13.

Was there such a thing as the Blessing of already married couples in the Garden of Eden or within God's will? In order to save you, I have opened the gates through which everything ragged and false can be patched up. This became possible through the inclusion of already married couples in the 36 Couples Blessing. That is the only reason you can go on living within the Will. P. 1410. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 13.

The parents who are already married couples cannot stand in the position of being an object to the Coming Lord, whether they are the president of the United States or Christian leaders. This is because they are already married. There is no logical basis to marry before the Advent of the True Parents. They need to connect with the True Parents through their virgin sons and daughters. The wealth in the possession of those parents belongs to Satan's side. It all belongs to the satanic world. The parents and even their children are all held in the satanic world. P. 1410. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 13.

At this time, blessed members will be responsible to bless their own parents. That is because they are closest to them. The parents can thus be blessed even if they are not very familiar with the Principle. We are now living in the era where even such people can receive the Blessing. This will be the final one. The era in which I bless already married couples is passing. From the next Blessing, the tribal messiahs should bless them. P. 1411. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 13.

Man is God's masculine and woman His feminine external form. P. 1411. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

If spouses think about someone else other than their partner, they are violating each other. P. 1411. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

Viewed globally, religions other than Christianity undertook the work of restoring the realm of the servant, whereas Christianity restored the realm of the adopted son. In restoring the era of the servant, many religions did not allow their

most devout believers to have possessions or spouses, and consequently they had to lead lives of celibacy and have nothing to their names. Thus, priests, monks, and nuns have no possessions of their own. A Buddhist temple may have possessions, but its chief monk may not. Furthermore, the idea of conjugality is not permitted to such people. Hence, from God's providential viewpoint, of the numerous religions that people have historically believed in, those that are on a higher level could not but emphasize celibacy. P. 1412. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

In order to win in the battle against Satan, you need a family. You can never be victorious if you fight as an individual because Satan invaded through the family, that is, of Adam and Eve. To restore this through indemnity, you need to receive the Blessing in God's presence. Thus, a new husband and wife must emerge. P. 1413. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

When you consider present-day believers in established churches, although they may have complete faith in their religion and husband and wife may love each other dearly, once they pass away to the next world, the spouses and family members will end up in different places. They will not even be able to meet each other. P. 1413. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

The path a family follows is the way of restoring through indemnity the realm of the suffering of women. P. 1414. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

All marriages performed from ancient times to this day are a source of sorrow to God. They have left conditions that sadden Him, and not one of them has left behind any point that can give joy to Him and form a connection with Him. P. 1415. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

When I say that a Blessed Couple must become as one, I mean to say that they must unite with me, the original plus, not just within the individual couple. You should know that the position of the Blessed Couple is one that has to follow such a course. Only after a man and woman achieve complete unity can they reach the original position of God. They must not engage in a love relationship before they attain unity with me. Until then, they should live like brother and sister. The love between husband and wife should be as pure as that of innocent teenagers and greater than that between any brother and sister. From such a place, they must pass through the process of respecting and serving each other. Once they have done so, God will come to them automatically. P. 1415. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

From this day onward, we do not need to go through the trouble of shedding sweat and blood in order to establish our nation. Once we give birth, multiply, and form a new tribe, then a nation is naturally created. Just like the Israelites gave birth to many healthy children while in Egypt, all we need to do is give birth. All we need to do is to be blessed like the sons of Judah and have many sets of twins. We are not to practice birth control. P. 1416. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

Blessed people are accused not by Satan but by God's angels. From the standpoint of God's laws, if you do anything wrong, the archangel will reject your status of being blessed. P. 1416. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

You cannot belong to two different nations. Since you have become husband and wife to create one nation of God, you can only be married once. Similarly, there cannot be two worlds, and since you are husband and wife for the sake of God's world, you can only be married once. Furthermore, there cannot be two gods, and since you as husband and wife exist for Him, you can only be married once. P. 1417. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 14.

If you cannot be a son of direct descent, you must at least be registered in the name of an adopted son in order to become one of God's heirs. Then you will share the right of inheritance. P. 1421. Left. Ch. 4. Sec. 1.1.

You will be registered in the Book of Life of the Kingdom of God. A new form of registration should take place based on the true parent-centered ideology and Godism, and at the same time, the organization of tribes should also take place. Similar to the twelve apostles of Jesus and the twelve tribes of Israel, we also need to organize ourselves into tribes. P. 1421. Right. Ch. 4. Sec. 1.1.

The era of tribal registration is coming upon us. It is not the era of individual registration. The coming era is the era of tribal registration, be it Kim, or Park. Once that phase is passed, the era of national registration will soon follow. P. 1422. Left. Ch. 4. Sec. 1.1.

The Blessing of the Unification Church is a church-level Blessing, not a national one. So there are three stages to pass through to the world level Blessing. After passing through the era of the church Blessing, what follows is the era of the national Blessing, which is the era of Blessing centered on the nation of God based on a united South and North Korea. Then comes the era of Blessing in which the physical and spirit worlds are united. We need to pass through the three eras of the Blessing. P. 1422. Right. Ch. 4. Sec. 1.2.

Therefore, when you go to the spirit world, along with the Great Initiation Ceremony you also need to participate in the Registration Ceremony and be organized into twelve tribes. Then, when the time comes for True Parents to pass on to the next world and be seated on the throne, centering on God, all people can take their own seats in the presence of True Parents in an orderly fashion. P. 1423. Left. Ch. 4. Sec. 1.2.

Since the Kingdom of God does not currently exist, the era is now approaching when all of humankind will be registered anew as the family of God. Accordingly, the era of the great exodus is also coming. P. 1423. Right. Ch. 4. Sec. 1.2.

You are not yet registered in the Kingdom of God. Since there is no nation of God, you cannot even make registrations of births before Heaven. You cannot get married unconditionally. You cannot even register deaths. P. 1424. Right. Ch. 4. Sec. 1.3.

What kind of nation would it be? It would be one in which a trinity is formed of the sovereignty, which takes the place of parents; the citizens, who take the place of the children; and national land, which takes the place of possessions. In order for a nation to be established, there must be sovereignty, citizenry, and territory. P. 1425. Right. Ch. 4. Sec. 1.3.

Where would the original homeland and homeland be? What would the homeland be like? Of course, the homeland would have a specific nation to create a foundation, but the homeland of humankind sought by God is in fact this earth. It is this earth that we are living on. This planet earth is the homeland yearned for by humanity. P. 1428. Left. Ch. 4. Sec. 1.4.

That is why Jesus preached, out of concern: "Therefore, do not be anxious, saying, 'What shall we eat?' or 'What shall we drink?' or 'What shall we wear?' For the gentiles seek all these things; and your Heavenly Father knows that you need them all. But seek first His kingdom and His righteousness, and all these things shall be yours as well." (Matt. 6:31-Section 33) Did he say you should seek His Son first, or His kingdom? He told you to seek the Kingdom desired by God. P. 1429. Right. Ch. 4. Sec. 1.4.

Every object in the world came to belong to Satan through the fallen parents. In order for all families to restore this situation centering on the True Parents, in the future they should have nothing in their possession. Nothing in this world should belong to them. Their own bodies do not belong to them, their sons and daughters do not belong to them, and their husbands do not belong to them. Everything must be regarded as the possession of unfallen Adam. Nothing should belong to Eve. She should not have anything established as belonging to her.

The era of the right of ownership is coming, where objects can belong to her only after they have been determined as belonging to Adam, restored to God and acknowledged as His, and then returned to Adam to be finally handed back to her as her permanent possession.

Such phenomena can take place only after you have entered the Kingdom of God and have been registered. Only then can you be restored to the position of unfallen owners in the Garden of Eden and hold possession of all things of the world. In such a manner, you can enter the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. P. 1430. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 2.1.1.

In the future, people will form an endless line unprecedented in the history of the world, making their way to be registered in the Kingdom of God by tribe, taking with them everything in their possession. Depending on who registers first, the elder brother and younger brother will be determined. P. 1431. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 2.1.1.

That is why you need to give everything in the Total Living Offering. You need to offer everything, even things that have life. You must not leave anything behind. P. 1432. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.1.1.

The sacrifice was split into two parts, the right side belonged to God and the left side belonged to Satan. This was true for human beings. This was true for Abel and Adam. Only when you can offer everything centering on God's love can Satan be separated from you completely. P. 1433. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.1.1.

The three goals of restoration through indemnity are the change of lineage, change of the right of ownership, and change of the realm of heart. P. 1434. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.1.2.

If you want to achieve mind and body unity, you first need to recover the essential love of God. P. 1435. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.1.3.

What must the tribal messiahs do? They need to restore all that Adam failed to achieve. True Parents came to earth and restored the unfulfilled mission of Jesus and the failure of Adam. Adam stands on the level of the family, but the roots of God's family could not be connected to Adam and Eve. So this must be turned around and, from the position of tribal messiah, you need to restore your own parents and tribes. In doing so, at least four generations are involved, your grandfather and grandmother, mother and father, yourselves, and your sons and daughters. By connecting these four generations, you then put down the ancestral roots where there have been no roots before, centering on your parents. P. 1436-7. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 2.2.1.

The position of the tribal messiah is the same as the position of the second true parents. P. 1437. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.2.1.

Taking Adam's family into consideration, you can see that as long as there are sons and daughters of Adam's family and his clan, a nation can be established. When you restore the tribe, then a nation will be established automatically. P. 1439. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.2.1.

Once the 160 nations are united into one, the world and cosmos will automatically come to be united as well. You must understand that Father has completed 160 nations. The question is how will you complete 160 families? How will you save 160 families as tribal messiahs? By succeeding in this, you can then be connected to the accomplishment of True Parents' completion of 160 nations. You can then be registered. If your family is restored in this manner, then based on the 160 families, the nation would be restored as well, resulting in the simultaneous restoration of all 160 nations. That is why tribal messiahs are needed. P. 1441. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.2.2.

Through the Fall of Adam and Eve, not only Adam's family but also his whole tribe was lost. The kingdom would have been built in only seven generations. In seven generations, the foundation for the Kingdom of Heaven on earth would have been completed centering on Adam's clan, but these seven generations failed to inherit the lineage of God. A few thousand families would have come from seven generations. P. 1441. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.2.2.

If the world had listened to the words of True Father, a world of peace, the Kingdom of Heaven, would have been established on earth in 1952. Then, what I am teaching you about now, namely, the tribal messiahs, would have been dispatched across the world. Since there are 800 million Christians in the world, 800 million people would have stood on True Father's side, and tribal messiahs would have emerged from towns of every description, with three generations from each family all being tribal messiahs. If this had taken place, the satanic world would have completely come to an end. Then a constitution, which would dictate how the world of the future should be governed would have been enacted and followed. That is why I have not yet taught you in detail the direction you have to take with your family. One thing you must remember is that the era of the great exodus is coming. The families who have followed the words of True Father, and have become tribal messiahs and blessed 160 families, are eligible for registration. Father will then decide the ancestors; who will be the first generation, the second, third, or fourth. Once the ancestors are established, kingship will exist. Therefore, we need to establish the family belonging to the kingship. P. 1443. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 2.2.2.

When registering, you will not be accepted if you do not know the language of the homeland. Unless your language, culture, and living environment show that you have completely inherited True Parents' realm of culture, you will lose the right to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. P. 1445. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.3.

On that day, not everyone will be granted entrance. The era of registration will then have arrived. When that day comes, gaining entrance to God's nation will be much harder than graduating from college, achieving a doctorate and becoming a professor. You will need to compile the history of all members of your tribe in your generation and have them passed. Both the spiritual and physical worlds will make an appraisal of them and select those who attain the requisite standard.

Bearing this in mind, would you say you have passed or failed in following the instructions of True Father for the last 45 years? You will be judged by how much you have done to come up to the standard. This is not a threat. Watch and wait. I issue instructions only after I have put them into practice myself and have accomplished them. They can all be found in writing in the Kingdom of God as the first article of directions, that is, in legal terms. Questions and answers will all come from them. P. 1445. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.3.

When the Japanese occupied Korea, they forced the Korean people to change their surnames through the name change mandate. So, why should it be hard for you to change your names now? This all happened at the time of Japanese occupation. Isn't that true? I am the person who has come to change your surnames. I have come to uproot your tribal registers. Are you offended by it, or not? I am saying that I will uproot the tribal register of slaves and have your names entered into the tribal registers of royal princes and princesses. P. 1445. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 2.3.

A heavenly tribal register has not been created since the time of Adam. P. 1446. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.3.

After you have been registered as tribal messiahs, if you do not know the Korean language, you cannot live in close proximity to the True Parents. Such a day will come in the near future. Registration must be carried out internationally and inter- racially. The time of the great international migration is coming. Therefore, you need to make haste to become national messiahs. Every word spoken by True Father becomes a reality in this world. That is the way it is supposed to be. P. 1446. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 2.4.

When a father passes on to the spirit world, he will become the elder brother and his son will become the younger brother. Therefore, Heavenly Father is in the position of father to both the father and the son. In the presence of God, everyone is a son. In this regard, they are all sons of God, but since the father was born before the son, he can assume the position of the elder brother on the horizontal level. P. 1448. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 3.1.

By making this declaration of unification in the joint presence of Heung-jin, the elder son in the spirit world, and Blessed Families, we will now enter the era where True Parents no longer need to perform the Blessing; instead, Heung-jin will conduct it, and in his absence, Hyun-jin can hold the Blessing on behalf of True Father. P. 1448. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 3.1.

You sons and daughters, Blessed Families who are all the third generation from God, must on no account commit the Fall, once you have received the Blessing. If you were to fall, the time in which True Parents come and save the world will pass. The lineage of the husbands and wives who have inherited the right of kingship representing the ancestors of the Three Ages, where the stained lineage has been completely changed and so can perform the Blessing themselves, must never be defiled in thousands and tens of thousands of years to come. The defiled bloodline must not continue. You must keep your chastity. This is a very serious matter.

You will no longer be able to ask for forgiveness, saying, "Please forgive us in the name of True Parents." There will be no other way for you to be saved other than sacrificing your own ancestors and your beloved brothers and sisters. That lineage would not be pure, and so it must be removed. A pure lineage must be passed on. This is very serious. P. 1448. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 3.1.

You cannot be registered unless you have the foundation of a family. P. 1450. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 3.2.

### 3.3. True Parents' instructions to Registered Families

- a. Steadfast defense of the pure lineage
- b. Settlement of unchanging heart
- c. Education of children in practicing true love
- d. Breaking down of national boundaries and cross-cultural marriage

e. Restoration of the homeland and establishment of the Kingdom of Heaven

f. Memorization of Hoon Dok Gyeong and Divine Principle

g. Fulfillment of the Family Pledge

h. Settlement of Noon

P. 1451. Left. Ch 4. Sec. 3.3.

Now the time has come for all those in your clans to be registered. If you do not take part in the mobilization, you cannot be registered. P. 1451. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 3.4.

The Lord at his Second Advent comes as the father. Nevertheless, all blessings of the Kingdom of God come down through the mother. The eldest son inherits and represents the tradition of the mother followed by the traditions of the parents, and the second-born son inherits all these and even the tradition of the first son.

Therefore, the mother should be absolutely obedient to the commands of the father; the eldest son should be absolutely obedient to the mother; and the younger siblings should be absolutely obedient to the eldest son. That is the way it should be. Therefore, it is the overall view of the Principle that any family failing to reach such a standard as just described cannot become a family which can attend God. P. 1451. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 3.4.

People living in this present age have inherited the lineage of Satan. For this reason, they need to repent. It is a disgrace, for which they cannot show their faces before the Great Owner of the universe. They are shameful children who cannot call out to God, and instead need to hide behind rocks lest He sees even their backsides. They inherited the blood of the enemy of love. They must crawl on their stomachs, shed tears with runny noses, and be able to admit, "I deserve to be punished," even at the risk of their lives. They must find their true selves and be able to give out a cry of gratitude from the bottom of their hearts, even if they face certain death. They are piteous beings who are ignorant of the fact that they have fallen into a pit of eternal resentment where there is no love. I came to realize that the fundamental issues of human life cannot be resolved without understanding the problems manifested throughout history, the true nature of the universe, and the grief of God. You do not know what trials I had to go through to find this path, unknown by anyone. You cannot even begin to fathom the hardships I went through in my youth, groping blindly in the dark in the quest for answers. However, I was triumphant in the end, built up an organization that can accomplish this task, not just in words but in deeds, and now the worldwide foundation testifies to it. P. 1453. Right. Ch 4. Sec. 4.1.

## **BOOK 10 – THE WAY OF THE COMPLETED TESTAMENT AGE**

Neither our birth nor our life nor our death stems from our own intentions. Then, what do we have to be proud about? We have no control over our birth, we are merely custodians in this life, and we cannot avoid the path of death. Thus, any attempt at self-praise and holding self-indulgent pride is pitiful. Once born, we are destined to live, and destined to die and pass away to the next world. P. 1465. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 1.1.

You can change your fortune, but not your inherited destiny. P. 1466. Right. Ch 1. Sec. 1.1.

A building is constructed according to an architect's blueprint. Without reference to that original blueprint, it cannot become what was originally intended in the design. P. 1467. Right. Ch 1. Sec. 1.2.

What kind of a father is He? In what way is He our Father? It gets rather vague after that. Is He a foster father, a father from the next town, or an adoptive father? What sort of parent is He? Is He the father of a groom or a bride? The word "Father" has various meanings. Without solving this fundamental problem, however deep or wide you delved into the world to solve it, you would never find the solution. Even after tens of thousands of years, you would not be any nearer the solution than you are now. P. 1469. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 2.1.

He is also our beloved Father. He made all the things of creation in order to fulfill His unique will. His purpose lies in the manifestation of love. Though He may be the Origin of true love and omnipotent, He cannot feel the joy of love by Himself. He needs an object for His love, and desires to receive voluntary love in return. P. 1470. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 2.2.

What is the center of the universe? It is parents and children, that is, parents and us. It is God and us. God is our Father and we are His children. Our ultimate purpose in life is to find our Father and to feel infinite joy by forming an inseparable relationship with Him. P. 1470. Right. Ch 1. Sec. 2.2.

Have you ever even tried to balance the accounts of your life? Have you gone into the red, or are you in the black? If you see red ink, you should lament most grievously.

People should be able to sing for joy on their deathbed. If you find yourself struggling to accept the reality of death when you face it, that struggle only goes to show that you have lived a life in the red. We should lead our lives in the black in the realm of heart, based on the absolute standard. P. 1471. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 2.2.

The value of a partner, of any being as a counterpart, is so great that it cannot be exchanged for anything or anyone, even for God. God cannot exchange it with Himself, for if He did, He would be left alone as a result. He would be left all by Himself.

This is why God invests Himself and exhausts His own strength and His own energy. He is engaged in a war of attrition. The forms of existence thus created with relational value that cannot be exchanged for God Himself are human beings. The form of existence with absolute value is none other than humankind. God created people as beings of value with such an idea. P. 1474. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 3.1.

Adam and Eve were God's son and daughter; at the same time, they were also His temples. Once they had matured, that is, once the temple had been built completely, He intended to dwell in them. Then, when the fully matured Adam and Eve performed the ceremony of holy matrimony, centering on God, they would have become as one with Him. He would then have become the internal God, and human beings would have become His external form with substantial bodies.

In 1 Corinthians 3:16 it is written, "Do you not know that you are God's temple and that God's Spirit dwells in you?" If those who are saved by faith can become God's temples, then surely Adam and Eve, in the position of the originally intended true ancestors of humanity, should have become His temples. P. 1477. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 3.2.

Where is the most sacred place of all? When asked where the most holy place is, we cannot answer that it is the temple in Jerusalem. Something man-made cannot be the most holy place. God builds the greatest sanctuary, where His love can dwell. This sanctuary, however, was lost. Thus, how great is the sin of humankind? P. 1478. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 3.2.

Adam was God's body and Eve in the position of His wife. If they had fulfilled their destinies, their children would have been born from God's lineage. It is the Principle that they were to be His kindred. P. 1478. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 3.2.

Eve is Adam's wife. Adam is God's substantial body. It has been said that we are God's temple. He is the invisible Father indwelling Adam's heart. These two fathers can then become one. They attain oneness. P. 1478. Right. Ch 1. Sec. 3.2.

The teacher closest to you is none other than your own original mind. More precious than even the closest of friends is your original mind, even more precious than your own mother or father. You need to consult your original mind. God dwells there. You should learn to listen to what your original mind tells you. P. 1479. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 4.1.

You should set aside some time to experience joy with your mind. To others it may seem as if you are all alone, but during that time, you would become friends with your mind. Sit with your mind at some tranquil place and meditate. Then you will enter a state of deep prayerfulness. You will thus enter a world unknown to anyone else but you. You need such experiences. P. 1480. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 4.1.

The Unification Church emphasizes a mind-body unity that can only be achieved through true love. P. 1480. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 4.2.

Mind-body unity refers to the state in which the body resonates in harmony with the conscience. When you strike one prong of a tuning fork, the other prong vibrates at the same frequency. In a similar manner, if you strike the conscience with true love, the body will resonate. Alternatively, when you strike the body with true love, the conscience will resonate. P. 1480. Right. Ch 1. Sec. 4.2.

Throughout history, the mind and body have been in constant conflict. If God had intended it at the time of creation, such a god would be the enemy of humankind. P. 1481. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 4.2.

"Before desiring to dominate the universe, first achieve dominion over the self!" P. 1481. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 4.2.

Your conscience must attain the standard of God's conscience, developing to the top of the growth stage reached by Adam and Eve. That requires having faith. P. 1481. Right. Ch 1. Sec. 4.2.

Thus, people choose to fast, take cold showers, sacrifice, and engage in voluntary service. There is no other way. Those gathered here, do you perform these actions too? Are you following this path? Do you pledge to sacrifice and serve others even at the cost of your own lives? If so, you need to follow the path of subjugation at the risk of your lives. The path of religion is that of submission. It transcends the mind-body conflict. Unless you tread the sacrificial path, you will not be able to achieve mind-body unity. P. 1481. Right. Ch 1. Sec. 4.2.

You need the awareness of God's intention for the complete unity in love of your mind and body, as created by Him. P. 1482. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 4.2.

Your original mind does not need a teacher. It is your second god. P. 1483. Left. Ch 1. Sec. 4.3.

The original mind represents the teacher as well as the ruler. Yet, it has been disrespected and treated with contempt for an endlessly long time. As the center of the universe, it stands in the position of true parents, true teachers, true masters, and the one Subject Being with true love. It sacrifices itself over and over again to save you while you live on this earth. P. 1484. Right Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

Since Adam could not reach perfection, God has been dispossessed of a body. He exists instead as the mind-like master, teacher, or manager, a mind-like parent in a mind-like universe. P. 1486. Left Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

When repenting, you should not do it alone. The four directions of north, south, east, and west need to be arranged first. You need to speak it aloud in front of those closest to you, such as your parents or your teacher. After doing so, you also need to make public what you have done wrong in front of your children and students. "I have done this thing; do you think I can be forgiven?" In this manner, you need to walk a path where those closest to you can support you with one heart. P. 1486. Left Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

When can your mind and body be unified? You have never thought of this, have you? This is a very serious matter. They are engaged in a lifelong fight, and who can stop them? This is the problem. Your father or mother, your king or your teacher, even saints cannot stop it. Where is the master who can stop it? Have you ever looked for him seriously? That master is true love. P. 1486. Right Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

Mind-body unity can be brought about only through true love. P. 1487. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 4.4.

The world of substance ends at some point, as does the world of knowledge. The world of power can be destroyed in a second, but the world of heart is endless. Hence, you need to act based on the world of heart. P. 1490. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 5.1.

Those who live for and love their parents in their families are filial children, those who live for and love their nation are patriots, and those who love the world are saints. Then what is it that I have been teaching you? It is to become God's divine sons and daughters, who love Him, the world, and the universe. P. 1491. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 5.2.

Great people have enemies before them, but saints do not. Great people love only their own race, but saints love all humankind. P. 1492. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 5.2.

A very precious thing is coming to you, and in order to receive it, you need to respect and live for the sake of the giver. Only when you practice altruism can you receive love. P. 1494. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 5.3.

The family is a miniature nation grounded within a small social unit. It is a miniature nation, world, and cosmos. Therefore you cannot do anything if you abandon your family. P. 1497. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

The most important times in a person's life are in the moments of birth, marriage, and death. Then how should one be born? They should be born well, or as we would say in the Unification Church, be born through the bond of heart. The next important moment is that of marriage. We marry in order to live a full life. Simply put, we marry in order to achieve the four-position foundation. Only when such public laws of the universe are established on earth can God's will, as well as the will of humankind, be fulfilled. The family is the place where we can find the structure and contents required by these universal laws. P. 1497. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

The world develops resembling the structure of a family. This always holds true no matter what state the world is in. The ideal world of the future, therefore, must be established based on the trinity of the family. Then what is the purpose of Creation? It is to complete the four-position foundation. Since human beings need to complete the four-position foundation, everyone should marry and form a family.

Human beings must take after God, and a society based on human beings must take after them, centering on God. I founded the Unification Church in order to make this come true. The whole world should already have developed to such a state, but it is not the case yet. However, through such principles, the world can ultimately come to resemble human beings centered on God. An ideal world is where the whole world is molded in the image of an ideal person. P. 1497. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

A person who has formed a family only to see it break up later is scarred with a wound that cannot be healed for eternity. No amount of consolation would do that person any good. P. 1498. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

The true family is the place where a husband sacrifices for and loves his wife as his mother, and where a wife sacrifices for and loves her husband as her father. Also, they should love each other as younger sister and older brother respectively. Heaven is where ideal families live in a world where husbands and wives love and respect each other as they would God. Such a tradition should be established on earth. P. 1499. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

In a family, who is at the center? The person who is the oldest member of the family, that is, if the great grandfather is still living, he would be the center of the family. If the other members of the family choose to ignore him, just because he will soon pass away, it would be the same as ignoring the vertical world. Even if he became senile, he should still be the center of that family. P. 1501. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.2.

In the end, seven points, composed of above, below, left, right, front, rear, and finally the central point, would be formed. The significance of fulfilling the number seven is that the seven points have become as one in perfected true love, centering on God, thus achieving a perfect sphere forming a family that manifests harmony and peace. P. 1502. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.2.

In the future, the Sunday service of the Unification Church should be in the format of a report, not a sermon. The contents of the report should be about something a family can be proud of. Therefore, the whole family would need to attend the service. In this way, the other families can model themselves after the exemplary families and be guided by them to the right path. In such a manner we can establish the heavenly kingdom for the family, on earth. You should bear in mind that before this is done God's Kingdom on earth cannot be established. P. 1505. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 2.1.

You cannot abandon your siblings. You cannot abandon your mother. You cannot abandon anyone in your family. Therefore, the word "Divorce" cannot exist. A husband represents the father and older brother, so a wife cannot abandon her husband any more than she can abandon her father and older brother. You have to love the world with such love. P. 1509. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 2.2.

Because God is at the center of the family, this world should be His Kingdom. The Blessed Families should strive to lead a life that works toward building His Kingdom. A God-centered tribe, nation and world are established when we live for

the sake of others on His behalf, so Blessed Families should be responsible for creating a God-centered world. P. 1510. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 2.2.

If you can love every person who is your grandfather's age as your own grandparent, you will surely enter heaven. If you can love every person who is your parents' age as your own, there will be no boundaries for you in the spirit world. If you can consider all the young people in the world as your own children, you will be able to visit any place in heaven. Even though there are twelve pearl gates leading up to heaven, you will be able to pass through all of them. P. 1510. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 2.2.

A sphere comes into existence only when front and back and left and right are connected relative to the vertical and horizontal. Only when a sphere is formed can you harmonize with others and not live a self-centered life. P. 1511. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

Reproduction takes place on earth. This is because reproduction is possible only through the physical bodies of men and women. Babies cannot be born in the spirit world. P. 1512. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

What God desires is to fill up the limitless universe. There should not be an empty spot in its vastness. He needs more citizens in order to achieve this. P. 1513. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

What is more precious, love or life? This is the problem. What comes first? The order of importance must be determined. The answer is that love comes first.

When God first established the ideal of creation, He did not do so centering upon Himself. Instead, it was centered upon love, and that is why He created the world of reciprocal relationships. P. 1515. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

Men and women were created to fulfill the ideal of true love, which is unique, eternal and unchanging. They were not created for themselves. Creation was initiated centered on God, who is the root of all. Therefore it can be said that the whole universe was created because of love. P. 1515. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

God's grief is that He could not educate human beings to become true children, siblings, and couples. He could not teach them how to be true parents. P. 1515. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

Above and below represent the duties of children towards parents, front and rear represent the duties between siblings, and left and right represent the duties between husband and wife. Once perfection is achieved in this way, you can then ascend to the level of God in the spirit world and become like Him. P. 1516. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

So if you love God, even though you had to abandon your family and nation for a higher purpose, you will still attain the position of having loved everything in the universe. P. 1519. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 4.

Who will build God's Kingdom? Only couples who are thankful even as they walk the way of crucifixion for the will of God can do this. P. 1521. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 4.

If God who has been guiding His providence for six thousand years did not have a purpose, then there would be no need to believe in Him. P. 1522. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 4.

Paradise, on the other hand, is a place where the most loving husband and wife, parents or children enter separately. It is not related to the family in any way. P. 1523. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 4.

The families who recite the Family Pledge should achieve mind and body unity. In principle, you could not recite it unless you are united in mind and body. P. 1523. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 5.1.

The Family Pledge needs to be recited on the foundation of the unity of mind and body, husband and wife, and of the children, so that everyone has achieved oneness with each other. P. 1524. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 5.1.

Conflict between husband and wife should not exist. It causes nothing but problems. Until now you have lived as you pleased, but in the future a time will come when family feuds are subject to the heavenly law. These laws will be severe; there will be no forgiveness. The women in particular must beware. Fallen women need to learn to control their tongues. They need to watch what they say. Women have important responsibilities to shoulder, because all responsibility will lie with them. P. 1524. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 5.1.

The Family Pledge is not for the general public. It is not intended for just anyone to recite. The beginning of the eight verses of the Family Pledge are set forth as a premise in the phrase, "Our family, centering on true love." This phrase can only be recited on a foundation that has no relation to the satanic world. P. 1525. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 5.1.

We need to rid the world of everything and everyone that was disloyal, impious and treacherous to God throughout history. P. 1526. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 5.2.

The realm of the royal family signifies that the direct descendants of the Lord at his Second Advent have no conditions of indemnity to fulfill. The direct descendants are not affected by them. Such conditions still apply to the woman and son in the realm of Cain, but not to the direct descendants. That is exactly what took place with True Mother, Sung-jin's mother, and Sung-jin himself. To put it more clearly, to be included in the realm of God's royal family is acknowledging the realm of Cain. By putting them in the position of the restored younger brother, and treating them as the royal family, Satan would have no grounds on which to accuse. Satan would have to acknowledge them, because he would have no conditions



on which he can claim them as his children. If the realm of Cain were not included, it would mean that within the satanic realm would be those who are not part of the royal family, and so Satan would still maintain his fallen existence. However, by recognizing the realm of Cain as part of the royal family, Satan would have to retreat. This is crucially important. P. 1527-8. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 5.2.

The Unification Church is the Abel-type royal family and the satanic world is the Cain-type royal family. P. 1528. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 5.2.

Therefore in the future, the world will be unified and there will be only one language and one set of customs and traditions. Only in such a circumstance can God dwell with individuals and families. P. 1534. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 5.2.

What would heaven be like? What would God's kingdom on earth be like? It would be the place where people all over the world would live like Unification Church members. God's kingdom on earth would be where every person adopted our way of life. P. 1538. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

There is nothing on earth that I covet at present. Even from a secular point of view, there is nothing for which I should feel envious. I am not interested in worldly things. I am not even remotely concerned about things like money, land and houses. "Be it in a one-room house or whatever, I must die when the time comes in God's kingdom. Shouldn't I pass on to the next world in a nation protected by God? If the end comes and I go to the next world without having achieved that, how pathetic my life would have been on earth! So I must seek out that nation, even if I only live in it for one day before I die." This is my lifetime wish. I am following this path with a mind that says for that one day of fulfillment, I am willing to sacrifice thousands of days. Even when you are resting, I am walking steadily on. If you can't do it, I will mobilize foreigners in your stead. And, if Korea can't do it, I will have the other nations engage in an enveloping operation. In any event, I must continue down my path. P. 1539. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

People without a nation are prone to face attacks at any time. They are bound to be placed in a miserable plight. More likely than not, they will be taken advantage of for no reason at all. P. 1539. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

Why have religious people fought a losing battle until now? It is because they have not had families, societies or nations to back them up in their faith. They were people without a nation. If they had had a nation to support them, they would have been able to survive within its domain even if their own tribes had opposed them. Yet, because this was not the case, religious believers were persecuted wherever they went, and were forced to walk the path of the sacrificial offering, shedding blood time after time. This was all due to the fact that they did not have their own nation. P. 1540. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

In this day and age, the world domain in which spiritual salvation was perfected on earth, the realm of Christian culture, is the democratic world. However, there is no Christian state in this present-day world that God can select as His chosen people and promise to send the Messiah to, just as He promised the Israelites in ancient times when He designated them as His chosen people, the covenant still held sacred by the Jews. All of you must understand this. This is the reason for which, having lost its land, and in pursuit of a nation floating in midair with only a name and no domain, the realm of Christian culture was driven west when chased from the east, and driven south when chased from the north, wandering and evading the path of death, and yet all the while expanding worldwide. P. 1541. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

If we do not have our own nation, then, however happy our family may feel, at any moment a group of brigands can appear in front of us and cut off our heads. Thus, we must establish our nation. Religious people do not understand this; they have no clear idea of it. We must establish a nation of goodness. This is the purpose of religion. P. 1541. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

Once the heavenly standard has been established, God is ready to strike. He takes the offensive. That does not mean that He kills His foes by executing them in the style of Stalin; instead, He makes them surrender at once. He must make Satan submit to Him, firstly through His ideology, secondly through His citizenry, thirdly through His sovereignty, and fourthly through His territory. P. 1542. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

When the people who have been resurrected through this Principle become as one, P. 1542. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

What would be the most difficult and arduous path for human beings? It would be the path to heaven. Of all the paths in this universe, it is the most difficult one for humankind. Once again: the hardest path would be that leading to heaven.

Did Jesus go to heaven? He is currently in paradise, the waiting room prior to entering it. That shows you how difficult it is to reach heaven. Then is God dwelling in heaven? The answer is no. Then is there anyone who could enter heaven ever since the outset of history? If God cannot dwell there, and His son could not even enter there, who on earth could have entered it? So, would there be anyone living in heaven at this moment? No, there wouldn't be even one person. P. 1544-5. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

At the beginning of the time when God could speak about love, He could only communicate in Korean on the foundation of the love centered on True Parents. The origin of the words True Parents is absolute. Therein lies the reason you must learn Korean. You should understand that the first place God could speak the words of true love is in Korea. P. 1547. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.3.

Then how did these peoples come to have different languages? Due to the Fall of the first ancestors, God separated them. P. 1549. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 3.1.

There is no doubt that God's kingdom is a place that is governed according to His will by the sovereignty held by His begotten children upholding His command. In such a place, democracy or communism cannot exist. P. 1551. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 3.2.

The world needs to return to Godism. Humanism cannot be trusted. If left as it is, the world will perish in less than a century. Only Godism will last forever. Only by the logic of true love can we inherit and become part of the tradition of Godism, P. 1551. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 3.2.

Today, the United States is considered to be a developed country as the suzerain of democracy, but a time will come in the future when it becomes corrupt because of money and it will learn to hate democracy. The current situation in Korea also reflects this fact. Though democracy in itself is a good thing, at present the people in Korea are engaged in all kinds of scheming and the slandering of others because of money and are fighting against everyone else to take power. P. 1553. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 3.2.

What will be the final difficult challenge that we will be faced with in this world? It will be the separation of the Oriental and Western cultures. P. 1554. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 4.1.

Satan is not part of the heavenly tradition, so he cannot last long. As the time for this tradition is coming, his end is drawing near, and so the end for Kim Il-sung, the Soviet Union and even the United States will soon be in sight. Only my God-centered ideology will remain in this world as head-wing thought. P. 1556. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 4.1.

When we consider the issue of East and West, we should not believe that democracy has emerged as the winner. There is nothing to democracy; it is just a method of explaining one form of politics. It is not based on any ideology. There is currently an ideological vacuum. Thus, from now on, we must educate the world about our ideology. We need to present to them Godism, or head-wing thought. We need an organization that can take the situation in hand and make our ideology into a system that can lead the world. The Unification Church alone is not enough. P. 1559. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 4.2.

Through the death of Jesus, the left and right wings, as well as the realm of Barabbas, came into being. Satan is standing in front of the realm of Barabbas. P. 1560. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 4.2.

What that means is that the Unification Church should not be equipped only with a logical system that can take responsibility for all the failures and wreckage caused by various ideological systems. At the same time, the Unification Church should also be able to take all these failures into its arms and strive for a transcendent form of existence, based on a spiritual awareness that can move them vertically, centering on religion. P. 1562. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 5.1.

Only when there is a nation can the traditions that we should hand down to our descendants for thousands of generations to come, all the efforts we have made shedding blood and sweat, and all traces of glory, remain as they are on earth eternally, and the monument that celebrates God's endeavors can be established on earth. Without a nation, all would have been in vain. If the nation God has sought does not appear, the crosses and culture of Christianity today will surely tumble into the river and burn up. You should understand that Satan is making a game of this; the real issue at hand is God's nation. P. 1563. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 5.2.

Only when we have a nation surpassing the satanic nations of the fallen world can we receive God's love. At present, we are receiving love from Him by proxy; as yet we are not eligible to receive love directly from Him. Though we can receive love from the True Parents, we will have to establish a nation before we can receive love from God. P. 1563. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 5.2.

Do you think that Satan, after six thousand years of sucking God's lifeblood, will meekly say, "Oh, this is my downfall," cast his eyes down, turn around and leave? Don't you find it hard to throw away even a piece of rag? Before you throw it, you would first turn it over and smell it to check that it has to be thrown away. Satan will not take his leave easily; on the contrary, he is fighting tooth and nail. Hence, we need to be aligned with the center. Even I would be defeated if I were to deviate from that. If a wrong direction is taken, there will be no development. P. 1565. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 5.2.

The Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages signifies the restoration of the right of the eldest son. It was held after both the vertical historical course and the horizontal course of indemnity on the levels of the individual, family, people, nation and world in short, the vertical and horizontal courses of indemnity in the eight stages, had been completed. It signifies the completion of the course of indemnity for all people of the world. All this comes to fruition through the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages. We have entered an era when we can come together in harmony through love with no need for indemnification because, after the restoration of the right of the eldest son, it is embraced in the bosom of the parents. War and struggle to restore the right of the eldest son are no longer necessary in the realm of parental love. In order to initiate this, the Ceremony of the Settlement of the Eight Stages must be performed. Through this ceremony, the children in the positions of the first and second sons can be forgiven by those in the position of the parents, and we can enter the next era of the forgiveness of parents. P. 1567. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 1.1.

Through assimilating the democratic and communist worlds based upon the ideology centered on the Heavenly Father, we will enter the era of establishing the right of kingship. P. 1567. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 1.1.

The two worlds are perpendicular to each other. A right angle is not the domain of Satan. The fallen world emerged when this original perpendicular relationship was altered. God can have dominion only over the places where right angles are formed. At such places, Satan cannot be found. That is where liberation takes place. The spirit world is liberated, as are the earth and all of creation. At that place the course of indemnity need not exist. P. 1571. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.1.

By my making public the declaration of the True Parents, Satan's authority and all the laws of indemnity which have caused religious struggles will disappear. Then all the good spirits will be on a par with the angelic world, whereby they will freely render assistance to earthly people, freeing this world from the effects of the Fall. Your ancestors will be able to work like the angels. Therefore, all kinds of phenomena will happen to those who oppose the providence. P. 1571. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.1.

You need to become bold. What I mean by this is that you need to exercise the rights of ownership of a subject partner. However difficult your situation, it should not be a big problem for you. When you say, "Not even God wants this. Be gone!" then it will be quickly gone. The same is true in the spirit world. If you were to say, "I don't want this!" then it will vanish. Such a power is all around you. P. 1572. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.1.

The overall meaning of providential history dictates that without having fulfilled the mission of tribal messiah, one's family and nation cannot be connected to the providence. We are so grateful to be able to welcome this day on which we can declare ourselves to be tribal messiahs. (*Chil Il Jeol 7.1 Day*) P. 1572. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.2.

The authority of the True Parents and God are the only things that can be on the rise. Therefore, others have now lost the power to overstep their authority. If they continue to carry on forcibly as they have done in the past, they will only collapse. If such a thing were to take place in Korea, then both North and South would ultimately perish. No single leader, whether from the North or the South, has the power to have his own way in everything. Thus, this proclamation must be made. Up until now, false parents have been in charge, but the time has come for the True Parents to bring everything together in a proclamation, which should be made this very day. P. 1574. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.2.

We are aware of how much You (God) grieved over not being able to help this son of Yours in his work, since all that You could do was shed tears and watch over his path. P. 1577. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.4.

Man symbolizes East and woman West, and all women will receive the light of the sun from the east and be on an equal status with men. Then a world of equality and agreement between East and West will be realized! P. 1579. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.4.

The Christian cultural sphere failed to take responsibility in 1945, and consequently the forty-year family-level wilderness course of restoration of Canaan ended in failure. Through the victories in Korea, Japan and the United States and based on the right of the eldest son and the thirty-four nations standing in the realm of the Cain culture, I could finally take responsibility for all failures and with full authority bring them to complete resolution on earth. On this day I proclaimed the Completion of the Completed Testament Era and God's Kingdom on Earth and in Heaven. When considered from the viewpoint of perfection of the family and all the liberated realms in the spirit world, Blessed Families can be divided into three different types, namely, the already married blessed couples, the couples who had been previously engaged outside the church, and the couples formed by the union of virgin men and women. With the three representative couples of the 36 Couples I made it possible for previously married couples, and for engaged couples of which one of the parties passed to the spirit world, to receive the Blessing there in the spirit world. Now the partner in the spirit world and the other on earth can come into union through the spiritual Blessing. I am permitting people in the spirit world to receive the Blessing and to have the three-day ceremony. We can assume there are billions of people who passed on to the spirit world when they were only children, and have reached the age of sixteen. People in such circumstances in the spirit world are being blessed, and through the Blessing they stand in the position of having been legally married during earthly life like the other ancestors in the spirit world. Previously they could not have entered heaven because they were under age and not blessed. I have given the Blessing to 1.6 billion such couples.

The Blessing brings inheritance of the foundation of a connection with the lineage of God's true life. Since there are people in both the spiritual and physical worlds who have inherited His lineage through the Blessing, He is able to have full dominion over them. Thus, even now, with full authority, He is freely pressing ahead with re-creation and the providence of restoration without needing to set up indemnity conditions. Hence, the question at hand is whether you can stand in the position of His object partner with such conviction. Once you have made your resolution to unite with the standard of absolute faith, love and obedience, everything can be rapidly put in place in the equalized world.

Every one of you should practice absolute love and obedience. The families in Eden had nothing in their name. Had they become true sons and daughters, standing in oneness with God and His absolute love and lineage, everything in the whole universe would have belonged to them, as God originally intended to bequeath everything to His children. Once you have attained oneness with God through love, everything will become yours.

You should not believe that everything you have in your possession truly belongs to you. Of the things you can possess, the greatest of all is God's love, and the greatest thing you can become is a family of His sons and daughters who are eligible to receive His love. This comes first. When that was lost, everything was lost. Conversely, through its recovery, you can recover everything. In order for you to establish such a family centering on God's love, you must create it from a position of possessing absolutely nothing and connect the foundation of absolute faith, love and obedience with the ideal. Having this original standard, you must stand in the position of being denied even by the satanic world.

Everything lost by Adam and Eve can now be fully restored centering on the family through the relationship with True Parents' lineage, which is based on true love. Hence, you should not have anything in your possession, for if you are united with God, His lineage and His love, then everything that belongs to Him will also belong to you.

As the Messiah and Parent for the whole world, I have assigned national, tribal and family messiahs who should all become as one with God and together with me take part in the great exodus. In this way, we should seek out the original homeland and establish our original nation there and thenceforth spread out to the world through expansion of the tribes. As we need to follow such a path, a great exodus must take place.

The Blessing of February 7 was an event through which I could rectify the failures of Cain and Abel. The responsibilities in regard to Korea, Japan and the United States can be settled once and for all, with full authority within the sphere of victory. We will hold revivals to advance the global expansion of true families.

Please observe how serious I am. I have said that at this coming Blessing ceremony I will open the gates of hell and bless even the murderers, something that not even God can claim to do. I am encouraging them to pass out of the gates of hell and come to heaven. Even those who opposed the Unification Church for years and years and who passed away can be blessed with their spouses who are still alive on earth and have their three-day ceremony in the physical world. I gave permission for this on March 13, 1999, before I left Korea for the United States.

Those who became saints and those in hell who are evil -- in short, every spirit from the saints to the murderers -- will be liberated. According to this principle, the followers of the Unification Church can bring whoever they want, even from hell, even a husband who opposed the Unification Church, have them liberated and receive the Blessing. Such things will take place.

Because of this principle that allows even the saints and evil spirits to unite together, the spirits of children who passed away before marrying can be liberated and blessed after they have grown and reached the age of sixteen or over. I have opened the gates of hell and blessed everyone. Through this, their authority as God's kindred can be acknowledged and Satan has no choice but to retreat completely.

Never has there been a revolution such as this. With these words which I have spoken today, the world has changed. The spirit world has come under Blessed Families, the three-day ceremony can be performed freely and the liberated realm has been opened. Through all of this, the lineage of the satanic world has been rooted out and we are now in the liberated realm of the spiritual and physical worlds under God's complete dominion. P. 1586-8. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.8. (1999)

Based on this declaration, henceforth, all blessed Unification Family members can confidently carry out their duties on Your behalf as the citizens of Your kingdom and members of Your kindred, for there is nothing that can hinder them from advancing. P. 1589. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.9. (1999)

During their lives, the True Parents must liberate God by following the path to perfection that is even hundreds of times more severe than Adam's original course. They must do so with a fully devoted heart that surpasses even God's love. P. 1593. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.10.

Satan's defiled lineage should be eliminated completely, leaving no trace. P. 1593. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.10.

In the history of indemnity until now, restoration was achieved at the sacrifice of the mother and her children, but with the declaration of 9.9. Jeol, fortune has turned in favor of the unification of North and South Korea, and on the day of unification we will enter the era of father-son cooperation. The mother is not primarily essential for restoration, for any number of them can be established. If Adam had not fallen, Eve could have been re-created many times over. P. 1595. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.11.

The True Parents are absolutely needed by the individual because only they can teach the way to solve the mind-body conflict. P. 1596. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.11.

Now, centering on 9.9. Jeol, you need to give the Offering of Total Indemnity. This offering is to be made for the ceremony of liberation and dissolution of anguish. The ceremony of liberation should be performed to dissolve God's anguish and liberate Him. You should realize that the Offering of Total Indemnity will also liberate the cosmos and yourself. After the proclamation of 9.9. Jeol on September 9, 1999, then as of September 14 at quarter past seven in the morning, we have entered the era in which we will pray in our own names instead of in the name of True Parents as we have been doing until now. In this era of cosmic unity and liberation, we are entering the era of freedom and autonomy in the environment of the fourth Adam. P. 1596-7. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.11.

What is the standard of all true bonds of relationship? It is the parent-child bond between God and each human being. The heart springing from this bond is eternal, unchanging and unique, and cannot be altered on the authority of any being. Moreover, the authority of this heart is absolute. For this reason, all forms of existence would automatically bow down and submit to a being that appears with this authority, and the whole universe would have to follow his every move. This is an intrinsic rule of the universe. If it were not so, we reach the conclusion that we could not achieve our true purpose, nor be able to forge one absolute bond with God. P. 1599. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 3.2.

Although God's grief at having lost His son and daughter is great, He is also afflicted with the sorrow of having no grandchildren. So three generations should live together under one roof with a heart akin to that of the First Creator (God). P. 1599. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.3.

By the time you have breakfast, you should forget the name of your enemy from the night before. By the time you have lunch, you should forget the name of your enemy from the morning of the same day, and instead set your mind to living for his sake and saving him, following the way of God's heart. If you do so, heavenly fortune will take care of you, and whenever you feel like turning back, it will urge you to continue along that path. You should not think of your enemies as enemies. I have forgotten the names of all my enemies. When the children of my enemies had no money to pay for school, I sent them money. When they had nothing to eat, I bought them food. Now I don't even remember who they were. Since such a heart has been beating inside me, now at this time, I am able to be the central figure who can set the world right and save the universe. P. 1599. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.3.

God and human beings are in a parent-child relationship. The relationship between parent and child is our inherited destiny. All sorrows and problems of parents can only be resolved by their children. Such is the path of children. There can never be disbelief or betrayal in a registered family. P. 1600. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 3.4.

You need to respect your parents and then God. What would then be even higher than Him? It would be love. P. 1602. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 3.4.

In other words the archangelic families on earth should come together and join the liberated domain of the Blessed Families in the position of perfected Adamic families on earth. P. 1604. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.6.

Needless to say, the wider the water pipes are, the more water can flow through them, and similarly, depending on how much you offer devotion, prayer and effort, the pipelines of victory connecting you to the spirit world will be installed. P. 1605. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.7.

With the completion of the mission of the Holy Spirit Association for the Unification of World Christianity, the mission of religion has been brought to a conclusion. For the first time in human history, we have entered a new era that does not require salvation through religion. The objective of the Family Federation lies in transforming families into ideal families, thereby restoring and perfecting God's ideal of creation and establishing the ideal heavenly world. P. 1606. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 4.

From now on the family will be the center of everything, so no one will be able to go alone. Even decisions made in the workplace will involve the husband and wife as one team. If the husband is the director, the wife will be the deputy director. When their sons and daughters satisfy all requirements, the whole family and even the whole clan would be assigned to important departments. P. 1606-7. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 4.

Cain and Abel have no original portion of responsibility to fulfill. Then who would have had responsibility? It would be Adam and Eve, the parents. Since I was given this obligation in the providence of restoration, I took responsibility for what you had failed to achieve and for the errors committed by Christianity. P. 1607. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 5.1.

Everything I have taught you is the key to enter heaven. None of the doors will open if the key does not fit the lock. Only when you open the gates with the key I have given you will heaven welcome you; nothing else will succeed. This key of mine is one of original nature. Even a key made of gold or silver, or any other kind of precious metal, will not be able to open the gates. My key, on the other hand, may seem to be made of humble brass, but it will open the gates instantly. No one else on earth can make such a key: it is that precious. P. 1608. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 5.1.

Originally I was supposed to live in a position of incomparable glory that entailed a glorious beginning, a glorious life and the work of building the bridge connecting with the world of eternal glory; yet the reality is quite the opposite. My path began with hardships in the satanic world, and the end will also come with suffering. P. 1610. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 5.2.

Until now, everyone entering the spirit world went either to a place like jail or the intermediate spirit world, even those who had passed that test. Now we must restore this world to be like a clean slate and lay a foundation and tradition on earth that will allow us to go directly to heaven. No longer should there be families going to the intermediate spirit world, paradise or hell. P. 1610. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 5.2.

Blessed families who have participated in the forty-day workshop in Jardim should sell whatever they have and prepare for a refugee life during the great exodus.

With the unification of North and South Korea and through Blessed Families becoming one unified whole, a hometown which God can acknowledge will be created; finally a hometown of God's kingdom on earth and in heaven will come into being.

The time has now finally arrived when everyone should unite, starting with the True Parents' family and extending to all tribes, clans and Blessed Families, and for all to settle. When North and South Korea are united, the world will want to follow us in every ideological aspect. Thus it will become one world. P. 1611. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 5.3.

In the same way the Israelites followed closely behind Moses, the time has come for you to leave this hell on earth and migrate to God's kingdom; thus, you need to follow a course tantamount to crossing a wilderness. It is the same principle as that of selling everything you have in your current place of residence, which represents Egypt. You would do so in order to prepare funds to enter and establish your hometown. Simply put, you should sell everything you have and pack up, for you will be part of a great exodus. P. 1611. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 5.3.

The significance of the era of the fourth Adam is that we are entering the age of natural restoration. P. 1614. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 6.1.

The era of restoration through indemnity has been concluded. Therefore, in the new era of the fourth Adam, through your effort, the sphere of freedom and liberation will expand. P. 1615. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 6.1.

The holy wine must be sprinkled over all nations. Isn't it true that one is revitalized when given the holy wine? The liberation of the fallen realm will be expedited. Even all creation needs to receive the holy wine. Then everything would return to the side of God. Therefore, the holy wine should be sprayed across the whole world from an airplane flying overhead, and if not the whole world then at least the major cities, accompanied with prayers. You need to understand how powerful the prayers of the True Parents can be. If they were to ask for a certain nation to be destroyed, it would perish. P. 1615. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 6.1.

You should nurture your families to be fit for the Kingdom of Heaven. Mothers need to keep this in mind and begin to teach this tradition while breastfeeding their babies. Implant the tradition within them by murmuring, “You need to become members of the royal family of God's kingdom. We love you on God's behalf. On the foundation of love shared by your parents, you can become a better couple than us. This is your parents' wish.” P. 1619. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 7.1.

## **Book 11 – THE ROOT OF THE UNIVERSE**

Man and woman are not enough to fulfill love. They are just two beings. Just connecting them is not enough to fulfill love. It is the love from the central position that brings them together and

moves them. P. 1630. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 1.1.1.

It should be clear that nobody but myself can amend the Divine Principle. P. 1632. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 1.1.1.

A feminine nature is found latent in man, and since a masculine nature is found latent in woman, there is room within her for him to live in the spirit world. As God possesses dual characteristics, He can dwell in woman as well as man. Similarly, despite their respective predominant features, husbands and wives can dwell in each other's hearts by virtue of the dual characteristics latent in them. They are one and inseparable. P. 1635. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 1.2.

On the path of love, you can never have a hateful mind. On the path of true love, there is never a place for a hateful mind. God's essence does not include the concept of enemies or evil because it is surrounded by true love. P. 1641. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 1.3.

Thus, in the realm of God-centered love, irrespective of direction, be it East, West, North, South, up, down, front, rear, left or right, everything, including the basic elements and minerals exist within a pair system, a subject-object relationship, in order that they can always attain harmony and oneness. P. 1643-4. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.1.

Everything in the world based upon the pair system and engaged in various kinds of existence and ways of life provides the textbook material for humankind in the process of seeking ideal love. P. 1644. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.1.

Anything without a counterpart will be banished from the universe, the created world. P. 1647. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.1.

The question is: why would the act of giving bring you prosperity and why would your possessions grow through giving? The answer is that this would correspond with the origin at the very beginning when God created the universe. Did God create the world so as to take from it? He wants to give to it. The more you give, the greater you would grow. If the United States adopted the concept of giving in all its affairs, it would grow in influence. If you continue to just take, everything you have will become smaller. By giving, you are taking part in God's principle of creation, and then the universe can assist and support you. P. 1651. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.

As they came into existence through love, their motion conforms to the axis of love. Motion cannot be carried out haphazardly. It only takes place between subject and object partners, and so everything moves in their appropriate positions after forming a love relationship. P. 1653. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 3.1.

All things in the universe are modeled after God Himself. Every one of them was created with Him as the original Subject; the only difference being whether they are in image or symbolic form. P. 1654. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 3.1.

As viewed from the next world, people who try to make money for themselves look like they are collecting garbage and useless things. In other words, saving money is the same as collecting waste material. P. 1655. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 3.1.

In terms of value, the relational being is a form of existence that cannot be exchanged for God Himself. The term “Relational value” sounds difficult to comprehend. The relational value of anything, the value of the object based on the word “Relational,” is so great that it cannot be exchanged for anything or anyone, not even God Himself. If God were to exchange it with Himself, He would be left alone as a result. He would be all by Himself. This is why God commits Himself and exhausts His strength, His energy. He is engaged in a war of attrition. The forms of existence thus created with relational value which cannot be exchanged even for God Himself are human beings. P. 1659. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 3.2.1.

A child's growth shows the process of how God passed through the periods of youth, middle age, and old age, that is to say, the child shows in substantial form the invisible process of how God developed. P. 1661. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 3.2.2.

God also underwent a similar developmental process. He passed through infancy, siblinghood, matrimony and parenthood. By parents giving birth to and raising their children based on the invisible God's past, their children can gain sight of God, the first and incorporeal Creator, from the time of His invisible babyhood onward. P. 1662. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 3.2.2.

Of all God's creatures, the only ones satisfying the conditions of being perfect object partners who can stand in front of Him are man and woman. You should thus be bold enough to be able to say, “I am the lord of the universe, the greatest in the universe.” P. 1664. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 3.2.3.

Everything in the world was created by God as the textbook to help His beloved children attain the ideal of love. P. 1668. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 3.3.1.

The size of this vast universe is approximately 21 billion light years. This is a Principle number. That is how big it is. P. 1669. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 3.3.1.

The evolutionary theory does not recognize the power of love. Only through the power of love does reproduction become possible. Without it, nothing could ever reproduce. How can the power of love work between amoebae and monkeys? Such a thing can never happen not under any circumstances. P. 1678. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 4.1.1.

If so, why can't evolution take place in reverse? Could it not occur in the reverse order, or in any direction, whether east or west? Who decided the direction in which to evolve? P. 1697. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 4.2.

Based on what should the two become one? Not God, or man, or woman. Unity can only come about when God, Adam and Eve are centered on true love, the absolute love. Such are the fundamentals of the universe. It is simple. Even God would be a lonely God without love. P. 1703. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

Though two beings may exist separately, based on love they are to become absolutely one. Though originally two, man and woman, plus and minus, must unite or monism cannot be attained. Instead, dualism is established, and dualism gives rise to the logic the world will divide into two parts that fight with each other. Therefore, though man and woman are two separate entities, they need to become one. P. 1703. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

I grappled for nine years with the question as to the origin of the universe, and finally found the answer. It proved to be a very simple principle. Then I said, "Wow, I didn't know this simple truth. I held the answers within myself but didn't realize it." P. 1708. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.

In order to be under the protection of heaven, we need to walk a path that does not lead to our own prosperity. It protects whoever acts in conformity with the original purpose of the Creator to seek after the ideal by living for others, on the basis of God's fundamental ideology. P. 1709. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.

No one has known that the way to internal unity within oneself is to find love that will perfect oneself. P. 1709. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.

Among the Unification Church members, with the passage of a decade or some decades since their first joining the church, there are those who have gradually become habitual. This was not the case when they first joined the church as they worked earnestly and thought of the greater good before themselves. However as time passed, such tendencies disappeared and they became slowly caught up in the devil's net, looking to derive profit for themselves. This marks the beginning of their ruin. P. 1710. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.

The sexual organs of Adam and Eve are places of greatness. That is why they are termed the original palace of love. This is an amazing term. The palace wherein all creation can be perfected and even God Himself can be perfected and dwell in is the original palace. P. 1711. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 2.1.

All problems in human beings arise from man and woman. The moment men and women are completely united, a world of peace will unfold before our eyes. P. 1718. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 2.2.

Where is the origin of love of the universe? It is God. P. 1725. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

Originally, without the Fall taking place, God would have come to dwell in Adam and Eve. God is the being with the dual characteristics of external form and internal nature, and the objects of that external form and internal nature are Adam and Eve. It was God's intention to enter their minds and form the realm of oneness of mind and body with them.

God was to be in the position of the mind of the original and perfected human beings. Human beings were in the position of His perfected body, and in this realm of mind-body oneness He would get married through Adam and Eve. That wedding is substantially and horizontally Adam and Eve's marriage, but vertically it would be God's wedding. (256-85, 1994.3.12)

Who on earth are Adam and Eve? Theirs is the position where the harmonization of humanity based on their horizontal ideal love is supposed to take place, the right angle set, and the focal point set up. That position would intersect the lines drawn from above to below, left to right, and front to back. What does this mean? Since God is the Subject with dual characteristics, and will enter the mind of Adam and Eve when they conform to the focal point of love, their wedding, as the ancestors of humankind who have not fallen, will be His wedding as well. P. 1727. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

What God wants is to achieve oneness with humankind through true love. The oneness of God and humankind! This signifies the realm of the union of God and human beings. If the standard of ideal that gives joy to God were contradictory to that desired by humankind, the situation would be dire. They need to become one, face-to-face.

In other words, they need to become one horizontally and vertically. When these meet on the perpendicular, then front and back, left and right, upper and lower the right side and the left side, all twelve directions will fit in perfectly wherever they are placed, for they would all be at ninety degrees. P. 1732. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.1.

That is the place where concave and convex come together as one. That is where the perfection of human beings, that is, the perfection of woman, man and God, takes place centering on love. P. 1736. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.2.

From a spiritual perspective, Adam's sexual organ is God's external sexual organ, and Eve's sexual organ is God's internal sexual organ. P. 1736. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.2.

The moment the male and female sexual organs come together without falling is the point where God's Kingdom on earth and in heaven originate. P. 1736. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.2.

Originally, had they not fallen, Eve would have become God's wife and Adam His body. Through the lovemaking of Adam as God's body and Eve as God's body, the union of God and humankind, of heaven and earth, should have taken place. P. 1739. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.3.

God's love is to become one with them at the time and place of their first lovemaking on their wedding night. However, they would not feel as if they were united with God because He has become completely one with them. But God would already be feeling the joy of the ideal of creation through the connection of love, life and lineage. In response to God's joy, man and woman feel pleasure in making love. I am referring to the marriage and union of Adam and Eve. P. 1739. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.3.

The marriage of Adam and Eve signifies the marriage of God with humankind. Similarly, all of you, as human beings, are to marry Him. P. 1740. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.3.

If God and Adam had attained internal and external oneness, God would have been the internal God and Adam the external god. God within, would have been the internal God, and Adam without, would have been the external god. P. 1740. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.3.

If God's true love and the true love of human beings were to start as two different forms of love, and thus have different directions and purposes, it would be impossible to find the absolute ideal world desired by God and human beings. P. 1741. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.3.

Art should be manifested in the family. Husbands should become entertaining and artistic. P. 1747. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.3.2.

Monuments of peace should be erected for woman's chastity and man's fidelity because man and woman are trusted absolutely. P. 1748. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.3.2.

The family system in the United States is such that grandfathers and grandmothers cannot visit their grandson's house whenever they like. If they want to visit him, they have to call first. Such procedures have to be followed before a visit. Think about it. In a love relationship, should one ask his or her spouse, "Let's make love tonight!" and get permission? Be it the wife or the husband, if one says, "Let's make love!" the other has to say okay. These are conjugal obligations. That is how it is. One cannot answer, "I'm tired, I don't want to!" P. 1753-4. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 4.2.

A person in whose face the lateral line (mouth-line) and the vertical line (nose-line) are straight is a person of true conscience. People in whose faces these two lines intersect at ninety degrees are conscientious people. P. 1757. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 4.4.

Everything flows vertically, coming to fruition in the sexual organs. That is where everything is bound to come together, whether bad or good. Hence, those who use them well become people of goodness, and those who use them wrongly become the worst people. P. 1759. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 4.4.

Nevertheless, Satan cannot ignore God, the great Superintendent of heaven and earth. Whenever he desires to carry out some act, he needs to get clearance from the God of goodness. P. 1766. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 5.

You should attend and love the sexual organs more than you do God, for only then would He rejoice. Where on earth would you hear such words? If religious people heard them, they would jump and fall down in shock, but this is the plain truth. Only when you attend the love organs more than you do God can the foundation on which God can settle be laid. It is more precious than life, and you cannot exchange it for the world, the universe, and even God. Only when you worship, love, and recognize the value of your spouse's sexual organ more than you do all God's creation put together, will God come to reside in your homes. P. 1767. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 5.

Thus, the angels also lived without any clothing. Clothing came into being after the Fall. P. 1771. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

How grievous it is for God that He cannot take measures against the archangel Satan who destroyed the order of love! P. 1772. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

You would give the order to the person closest to you, and that is why God said, "To not eat of the fruit of good and evil" to Eve. What is that fruit? It refers to the female organ. P. 1773. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

Adam's sexual organ is the tree of life. P. 1773. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

What is the fruit of good and evil? It becomes good if you enter into a relationship with a good man: if you marry a king, you'll give birth to a prince, but if you marry a gangster boss, you'll give birth to a future gangster boss. That is what the fruit of good and evil is: the thing that is able to bear the fruit of good or evil is the female sexual organ. P. 1776. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

The mistake of one day overturned the history of eons, completely burying God, true parents, and the ideal world under it. That is how frightening the sexual organs are. P. 1777. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.



If He forgave Satan, it would have led the whole world to destruction. P. 1778. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.3.

In Romans, Chapter 8, it is recorded, "And not only the creation, but we ourselves, who have the first fruits of the Spirit, groan inwardly as we wait for adoption as sons, the redemption of our bodies." An adopted child has a different lineage. P. 1779. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.3.

When Adam was driven out, was it after having a son and a daughter or before? We could not witness this, but had there been children with Adam and Eve, would God have been able to chase them away? He would have had to shed many more tears. They would have clung to Him and cried, "Grandfather, why are You chasing us out?" If all four of them clung to His arms and legs and cried out, wouldn't He have had to push them off in order to drive them away? Perhaps rather than Adam and Eve who sinned, but their son and daughter who had not sinned would have penetrated God's heart. Knowing this, He chased them out before they could have a son and daughter. P. 1780. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.3.

When a man enters into a trance of spiritual prayer, a woman will always appear to test him. Something like this will inevitably occur that blocks the way of asceticism. P. 1780. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.3.

In the secular world, criminals conduct themselves with dignity wherever they go as if they had not committed any crimes when no one knows of their crimes. However, if even an extremely young boy were to point out that he saw the crime being committed, the criminal would surrender right there. Thus, if you are to make the devil, Satan, surrender, what you should do is to expose his identity, reveal his crime, and launch a movement to drive him out from both heaven and earth. P. 1782. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.3.

The day you lose your purity, your whole clan will be ruined. P. 1785. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.5.

Where did the Fall originate? The Fall began in the male and female organs. The organ itself is like the serpent's teeth: once you are bitten, your family is ruined. However distinguished your household may be, it will be ruined in a flash if that organ is misused. Even a royal family will be totally ruined. Thus, AIDS has appeared like a judgment from this truth in the Last Days. P. 1787. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.5.

Disco dancing, liquor and smoking; you should have nothing to do with any of these things. P. 1788. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.1.

What kind of weapons did Satan use? He used an airborne weapon: that is smoking. Next, the liquid weapon is liquor; and then the solid weapon is drugs. Through these means, everything including your spirit is made to rot. He makes everything rot in your body and spirit, and everything from the nostrils to the lungs. So we do not drink liquor or smoke cigarettes. These are the weapons Satan uses to destroy human beings. These three things, which are elements that prevent one's spirit from communicating with God, are the enemy's best weapons. P. 1788-9. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.1.

We must know that is why America has now become the bottom of hell. P. 1789. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.1.

There will come a time when people cannot help but believe in the Unification Church. I am notifying you that even if you are unable to believe, I have the responsibility to guide your sons and daughters to go such a way without fail, even if I have to drive them with a whip. P. 1789. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.1.

First love was meant to be eternal, yet he turned it into a love between mutts and bitches. Heaven and earth became a world of such worthless love. This is the story of the human lifespan of seventy years. P. 1789. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.1.

Is it all right for women without husbands to put on makeup, or not? Aren't prostitutes and street girls like that? Today, unmarried young girls are walking around with rouge, but do you know how ugly the rouge looks? The original natural color of young people is beautiful. If you beheld it for a thousand years, you would still find it beautiful, not ugly. How beautiful that color is! You cannot produce color surpassing that. P. 1790. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.2.

It is the responsibility of True Parents to repair all this, as if sewing together rags to make them better than a silk robe for God to wear. P. 1790. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.2.

Where the original lineage was lost, no culture of heart will emerge. P. 1798. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.2.2.

A clean lineage, a pure lineage, must be maintained. Just as God drove out fallen Adam and Eve, if your lineage is stained, you must remove yourself completely and return to the back of the line of humanity to come in as fallen people. In the future, leaders will be only those who preserved their purity. These people will inherit and also bequeath the mainstream traditional thought. It is unforgivable for Blessed Couples to fall again. P. 1799. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.2.2.

From now on, when I conduct the Blessing, I will not bless those who flirted and violated chastity. Unless you are chaste men and women, I will not marry you. When the restored Adam and Eve settle in the Garden of Eden and stand in a public position in the world, will they gather together fallen sons and daughters and bless them? Such a thing is impossible. Thus, those who have flirted and had relations must know that whatever kind of man or woman they are, they will not be able to receive the Unification Church Blessing in the future. If that is the case, my intent is that there will only be the sons and daughters born from blessed marriages. Thus, I will marry only the children of Blessed Families. P. 1801. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.2.2.

Do the American people have a view of the world? They have no worldview. Do they have a view of the nation? No. Not to mention a view of society, they do not have a view of the tribe, people or family. They deny their mothers and fathers. That is individualism returning to the position of the archangel, the devil. P. 1803. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.3.1.

How much did I invest for the sake of the world? How many tears and how much sweat and blood did I shed, and how many sighs did I heave? I did not do that for the sake of feeding myself or making myself successful. It was in order to liberate this earthly world, the spirit world, and God. P. 1807. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.3.2.

When you invest yourselves in others with a heart of true love, that investment is never lost, but will actually yield an output greater than your input. Why? The universe is like that. Such phenomena attract the attention of the universe like a magnet. True love also has that effect. As for a magnet, if there is a metallic object close by, doesn't its magnetic force depend on its iron content? It is the same: true love attracts the universe. P. 1809. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.3.3.

Despite your diverse lineages and backgrounds, in order for you to resemble the True Parents, the great feat of engrafting must take place. You must all writhe and squirm to be engrafted. You yourselves must pay off your remaining debts of indemnity. P. 1809. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.3.3.

Thus, at the time of your Blessing, didn't you undergo the ceremony of the conversion of lineage? You must believe in it more than you believe in your life. Do not regard it as an ordinary ritual just because it is one of the ceremonies of the Unification Church. This is the same as an injection that brings the dead back to life. P. 1810. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.3.3.

True love is most sacred and precious to people. It does not arise if you are by yourself or self-centered. True love is manifested when you seek to attain oneness with others by living for them through giving endlessly without remembering what you have given. P. 1810. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.3.4.

God's ideal intended through the ancestors of humankind was to create an ideal family by bringing together a man and a woman. Thus, the center of an ideal family is neither of them. A family is a unit consisting of parents and children formed through the union of husband and wife, but the center of that unit is none other than God's love. P. 1811. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.3.4.

There is no doubt that God's purpose in seeking humankind must also be for the sake of His own happiness. P. 1811. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.3.4.

## **Book 12 – THE PACIFIC RIM PROVIDENCE**

If you enjoy yourself in the sea, you will find many things that are more interesting than the pleasures on land. That is why I am trying to make a submarine. Such an age will surely come in the future. Everybody will have a yacht and be able to sail across the seas. They will also take underwater trips. How amazing that will be! We will advance to an age when we can move about in the water and live with groups of fish, sharks, and whales. I believe that if I prepare for that, we will be able to lay claim to the economic rights of the world. P. 1826. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 1.3.

What kind of age will the future be? Why would you want to spend hours on a plane? Instead, we will build a massive steel column in the middle of the Pacific Ocean and build a hotel. How diverse are the functions of a helicopter? You can fly anywhere you like with a press of a button. Yet, flying becomes boring, even after three hours. So, we will fly for one or two hours and then stay in a marine hotel. It will be fantastic! We will build a hotel on the Pacific Ocean. Then, it will take only a few hours to get there, and you can have lunch or go on a boat with your family, or even go fishing. What a wonderful life! P. 1827. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 1.3.

I also want our Unification Church members to live prosperously. P. 1827. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 1.3.

However, the North Pole has snow eight hundred meters deep. That is fresh water that was accumulated thousands of years ago. It is not polluted, but clean, even after ten thousand years. It is the same with the South Pole. What if we were to build a cultural city like New York below the ice, do you think many people will come to see it or not? This could actually be done. Don't you feel excited just thinking about it? If you build a tunnel in the ice, it will not collapse, but last for ten thousand years. By spraying cold water on the inside surface once a year, the ice will stay frozen and eventually become solid. P. 1827. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 1.3.

Young people should develop an interest in the ocean. Someone who can take responsibility for projects in the ocean must emerge among you who are here. The reason I go out to the Atlantic Ocean and stay there for twenty-four hours is to establish a tradition of having loved the ocean. P. 1830. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 1.5.

When Jesus told Peter to become a fisherman of people, he meant that fish were a symbol of people. That is why if we catch fish and take the lead in the oceanic regions, we can even gain a leading position in the landed regions, too. This is the viewpoint of the providence. Therefore, if we take the lead in Alaska, we then gain a leading position in the oceans. Eighty-five percent of the income of the world's marine products industries comes from Alaska. Five percent comes from the Atlantic, and the final ten percent comes from the Pacific.

You can find salmon in Alaska. You know about salmon, right? There are five species of salmon. One is pink, and another is red. There are many types. If you release them after a couple of months, their young hatch in fresh water and swim out to sea. They go four to five thousand miles as they swim throughout the five great oceans. That is how they travel. After four years, the salmon are old enough to lay eggs. They become mature female and male salmon, and when the time comes to lay eggs, where do they go to meet their true love partner? They are bound by a pact that makes them seek their birthplace to meet their partner. They are bound together by that law. Who established that law? Did the salmon do that? That is a mysterious question.

If you observe the salmon in Alaska, they lay their young ones in July and send them out to the sea. These fish swim four to five thousand miles during a four-year period, and then sense their way back to their old hometown. Even today there is no way to scientifically explain this wonder. No matter how hard people study this, they cannot find the answer. Do the salmon return because they have some kind of antenna or radar?

The young salmon return to their hometown after four years to lay their eggs, after which they all die. Their flesh becomes food for their young ones to grow. There is a saying: "Of all creation, human beings are of the highest value." Yet, look at human beings. They don't even know how to return to their hometown. They don't know how to go there.

Once when I saw a salmon, I thought that salmon are just like the Unification Church members. Our church members are the ones who return to their hometown. The pair system is part of Godism. The male and female salmon don't pair up and spend four to six years together in the ocean. When the time comes, the male first swims upstream and the female follows him, where they meet for the first time. Then the male and female gather in a pool and create pairs like the matching ceremony that we do in the Unification Church. What is truly mysterious is that the male and female look exactly the same when they are in the ocean, though they may differ slightly in size. Once they find their partner, the male salmon changes its appearance in two weeks to the extent that one wonders whether such transformation is actually possible.

When they swim upstream to mate, the male salmon already looks like a lion. He becomes a fearful sight, with his lips like this and his teeth protruding in this way. His head and back come out like this, just like a lion. Even a salmon would go to such extremes, so as to leave behind its superior species. How do they find their hometown after traveling about the ocean for four to five thousand miles? This has been an unsolved mystery until now. How could these small fish, these young fish that are no larger than fifteen centimeters after six months, leave their hometown for the ocean, and then grow this large and come back to their birthplace? And when the season comes, they already know when to have babies. P. 1841-2. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.1.3.

You should also be determined to leave your footprints on top of my footprints. The way of the Principle is in following the footsteps along the path. You cannot jump past those footsteps. The grandfather and parents must follow this path. Even the descendants and generations to come must also follow the way of the Principle in the exact same way. That is the path of indemnity. P. 1849. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.1.4.

In the future, all human beings will become members of the Unification Church. P. 1857. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.1.

Other universities are like a lighthouse that destroys the moral foundation. They are the bases for God's enemy, something like Satan's army base and the seat of Satan's power. They are exerting their influence from there. We have to destroy their influence. They claim that God is dead. P. 1858. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.1.

In Noah's time, the fish were not judged. P. 1859. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.2.

They have carried on their line of species while living in nature untouched since the time of Creation. That is why the Pantanal is the world's Holy Ground. P. 1860-61. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.2.

You have to eat both good things and bad things. Don't fallen people discard the bad and eat only the good things? Love is not that way. Love takes in and digests even hell. P. 1861. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.2.

We have to dismantle the kind of civilization represented by New York City and Washington, D.C. We have to go back to more primitive times and to return to nature. That is why I went back to nature, and in the Pantanal, I live in constant love with nature. The great oceans are pure. How clean the water is! There is clean water and clean air. Nature here is clean. How good this is! P. 1863. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.2.

All Blessed Families must go to the Pantanal. It is an imperative. People say many things about going, but if they cannot afford a plane ticket, then they should just walk here. If the father is sick, the wife and son should go with him on their backs. P. 1863. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.2.

In the near future, the national messiahs should become environmentalists and create a sentry post in 180 locations, using the rally and everything that I prepared. Then they should influence the scholars, and the presidents of universities in each nation worldwide who are interested in the environment. P. 1864. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.2.

The Pantanal is at the end of the earth. But the Original Holy Ground, Root Holy Ground, and Holy Ground of Victory can all be found there. This is something tremendous. The Original Holy Ground is set up in our hotel in the Pantanal. P. 1864. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.2.

The Pantanal is the focus point, the root. It is the source. That is why the families of the Unification Church must visit this place once every four years. P. 1864. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.2.

Human beings are responsible for preventing the species created by God from becoming extinct. P. 1865. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.3.

To build a town that can be connected to modern civilization and city life, I will create a museum displaying the 3,600 species of insects in this vast area. All the insect scholars should come to this place. I will also make a fish farm that can raise 3,600 types of fish, and then I will make a bird zoo and a botanical garden. After that, I will make a zoo for people, a human zoo. It will be a real zoo, but a human zoo. P. 1867. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.2.3.

When Heaven tries to give blessings, if the recipient is not ready, then Heaven departs from there. P. 1868. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.3.2.

The ocean also gives off a blue hue that an observer would never grow weary of over a period of thousands or tens of thousands of years. Blue is the color of consolation.

Why did God create the color blue? You will not be exhausted; no matter how long you gaze at the color blue. It is the color of consolation. It is the same in all of creation. The sky is blue, and the ocean is blue. How ideal! Once you are immersed in God's love, everything including people and the world of nature, would become your friend. P. 1876. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.4.1.

It is the greatest feeling to be at sea alone in the very place where the ocean and heaven become one. I constantly go out to the sea to benefit spiritually and in all ways. If I stay at home the entire day, I become distracted and end up thinking about the world missionaries, church problems and other matters, yet only vaguely and in fragments. But when I go out to the sea, I can think more comprehensively. P. 1878. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.4.1.

Even if you do not follow me around, I am trained in such a way that I could fulfill God's will, even through a bunch of beggars. P. 1884. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.4.3.

Indemnity conditions would not be established if I offered devotion in comfort. P. 1885. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.4.3.

I have a good name. The Chinese character for Sun is a combination of the Chinese character for "fish" and "lamb", which unifies the land and the ocean. The Chinese character for Myung symbolizes the sun, moon and space in the heavens. The Chinese character for Moon when written quickly looks like, and is related to the Chinese character "father". If there is a word meaning "the father, or "True father" that can be explained through the truth, then these words should be placed in the closest position. P. 1886. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.4.3.

I would like to build condominiums and create an organization in which people can live together, but not in separate houses, and take all the elderly people to parks worldwide and educate them. I would like to build ships, hunting grounds, and also airports and hotels. I am thinking about leading the world with this kind of hobby industry. For this purpose, I am establishing an airplane company. You can fly anywhere with small and medium-sized airplanes. From now on, I am planning to create a worldwide sightseeing network by establishing airports, even in countryside towns. P. 1889. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.1.

Men who do not know how to fish or hunt are more like women in character. P. 1893. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.1.

Even so, True Mother does not like sushi. At first, it feels as if you are chewing snake meat. It also slides out of your mouth when you are chewing. It is the same as snake meat. However, after having tasted the striped bass, True Mother has been saying, "Sashimi! Sashimi! Striped bass sashimi". When I tell True Mother to get ready for fishing, she says, "Oh, really?" and she follows me, knowing that we are going to fish for striped bass. P. 1894. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.1.

When you look at all the fish in the sea, they all eat up the smaller ones, so how is this God's love? For these fish, the ideal is to serve human beings and be absorbed into the human cells, where they can receive God's love. Because of that, the minerals are absorbed before the plants. They are absorbed in human cells, in which they can receive God's love. The plants are absorbed by the animals, and the higher animals are absorbed by human beings. All those creatures that are fine and delicious hope to be absorbed by people. The best cells are absorbed by their owner, in hopes to connect or return towards the original palace of love, as the realization of God's sons and daughters by being the real body of love. P. 1895. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.2.

To hunt is barbaric, for you shoot the animal after waiting at a strategic point. And to shoot at something that is flying is not proper. However, fishing is not like that. The fish come and bite onto your bait themselves. So it is all right to catch them. P. 1899. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.2.

The members of the Unification Church should know how to do three things: how to farm, how to hunt, and how to fish. Therefore, even if you go alone to a village in Africa, it should only take you a week to establish the basis for you to live by feeding the village people. If you feed them for one year, then they will feed you from then on. P. 1900. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.3.

There will be a time when thousands and tens of thousands of families can live on one lake. Those fish are all ours if we just know how to fish. Who should fish? Women should do it. Why? It is because women have large, cushion-like hips. They are comfortable. Thus, they can sit for a long time. Men feel pain after sitting for just three hours. Therefore, if one woman catches three fish, she can feed three children, and if she catches four, then she can feed even the father as well. When she goes to the fishing area, she can catch ten fish and perhaps even a couple of dozen fish within one hour.

Say there are one hundred families in a village. If they form groups of a hundred women and they decide to catch one hundred or two hundred fish, there would be no problem. It will work by mobilizing a small number of people. The mobilization of all people is not necessary. We can feed them by mobilizing a small group to fish once a month. P. 1900. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.3.

Hunting is exercise for the sake of your physical health, and fishing is for the sake of your mental health. You tend to reflect on your life and think a lot when sitting down and fishing. It is amazing that you can actually have such a time. You can analyze your past and plan for your future. It can be the most important period of time for us. You can calmly reflect on yourself with dignity. This is absolutely necessary. This is called the spiritual path of fishing in the East. The

baby fish come along when the mother fish is hooked and caught. So people think, based on their own life, "Oh, I should not catch these fish!" when observing such an occurrence. People tend to think about their own sons and daughters, and their own people as well. After fishing for a couple of years, you will want to free the fish and put aside all thoughts of eating the fish just caught. That is the true spiritual path. The desire to eat simply vanishes. P. 1903. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.4.

From history comes forth a new world. Therefore, you cannot point at me and tell me that I am wrong. I am not ashamed. Say it while looking at the faces of the fish. While fishing and sitting all day, I say to the fish, "You have not seen any other man like me, right? Catching you is not my purpose. By bringing you fish to the fish farm we can liberate human beings from their food shortage. Isn't that the original purpose for your creation? If that is the case, then those people who eat your meat will not be considered as having done an evil deed." P. 1903. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.4.

Those people who are in the higher place should move down to the lower place, and those who are in the lower should go to the higher. Therefore, after having succeeded in fulfilling all of God's will, I would go down to some low, remote corner of the countryside and live in seclusion, fishing and being friends with the farmers and fishermen. P. 1907-8. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.3.4.

A life of leisure! This is the kind of life that God likes. Your hobbies are connected to the creation. So many different hobbies are waiting for me. I never get exhausted. By enjoying one hobby after another, I automatically come closer to God's world. This is the best life that men can hope for. P. 1908. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 2.1.

Everyone must enjoy leisurely pursuits. After all, God did not create reluctantly. He made creation so that He could feel its excitement. We, too, must experience God's situation at the time of creation. Hobbies should not be done because someone tells us to do them. Hobbies should be done because you wish to do them. Even without sleep, you enjoy doing your hobby. P. 1909. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 2.2.

We must develop the hobby industry from now on. It is not the leisure industry, it is the hobby industry. Normally, we perceive the leisure industry as based on a profit motive. Fishing and hunting can both lead to thoughts of profits and commercial interests. That is different from just having a hobby. The hobby industry can spread to the small villages where people can enjoy themselves in each of the four seasons. P. 1910. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 2.2.

Men are made to live centering on hobbies. P. 1911. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 2.3.

All people should have a hobby. In the future, people will not have any food problems. Then would you spend your time fighting with each other? Everyone needs to have some fun. P. 1912. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 2.3.

Today, people throughout the world are talking about the coming of the era of the Pacific civilization. Why is that so? It is because the origin of history can be found in that region. P. 1915. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

Where should America go? It should return to Asia. It should seek the Asian continent where Jesus' body was lost. P. 1916. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

Since Jesus lost his body in Asia, a global political domain corresponding to the body must be unified centering on Asia. P. 1916. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

Jesus came as the father, but the body of that father was killed. We must recover this body and make it one with the legacy of spiritual salvation within the sphere of Christianity. That is why the Lord comes to the East. Centering on the coming Lord, the Korean peninsula is like Italy. Until now, Italy has never been destroyed. For over two thousand years, it has survived as a powerful nation. That is because Italy is a counterpart nation for the coming Lord. Based on that standard, the Lord returns to the Pacific era, centering on this Korean peninsula; but it is the Pacific Ocean era rather than the Mediterranean Sea era. He returns to the vast environment of Asia through the connection of the Korean peninsula. P. 1917. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.1.

What is the Pacific civilization based around? China and Japan are thought to be the center at this time. Actually, this is not the case. The Republic of Korea - the Korean peninsula - will inevitably become the center. From a topographical point of view, the Korean peninsula, as the crossing point between Hellenism and Hebraism, is where worldwide democracy and communism, materialism and theism, are in confrontation. This is where the embodiment of the evil true parent and the good True Parent, Kim Il-sung and I, respectively, are in confrontation, with both of us trying to digest the other. The Korean peninsula is the final destination of history. The central body that brings this to oneness is the peninsula that takes on the form of the male sexual organ of the continent. This can embrace all of the Pacific Ocean. P. 1927. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.2.

We should take the path of restoring a nation. In restoring a nation, we do not need the nation called Japan. In restoring a nation, we need to do so from a supra-national standard. To do so, we need to restore one nation under the aegis of the UN. But since the UN does not listen to me, I made the Federation of Island Nations. This is the Abel-type UN. Then I made the Federation for Peninsular Nations. In addition, I created the Federation for the Nations of the Six Continents. P. 1928. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

I must leave Korea and find my place in the global arena. If I cannot become a national messiah, I must go beyond it by standing in the position of a global messiah. Once twelve nations are established, then everything will be accomplished. That is why I created the Federation of Island Nations, the Federation of Peninsular Nations, and the Federation of Continental Nations. I told you to negotiate with the UN by using these organizations. P. 1928. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.1.

America withdrew from Asia without fully carrying out its responsibility during the Vietnam War. As a result, providential history was seriously damaged. P. 1939. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 1.1.

The Mediterranean Sea is like a woman's womb. Israel is located near the Italian peninsula where the sexual organ, in terms of a woman, can be attached. It is very unusual indeed. The nation located in the deepest part of the woman's womb is Israel. That is where the Lord was born. P. 1941. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 1.2.

Jesus was in a position where he could have avoided death by various means if he had tried. P. 1942. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 1.2.

\*\*\*\*\*

They have become part of liberalism and so, no longer mention one word about creationism. Instead, they assert that the theory of evolution is correct. You should know that we are living in the final and last hours of the Christian cultural sphere, where the authority of the churches is about to be revoked. P. 1946. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 1.3.

Satan opposed the union of America and Japan, and tried to stop the unification of Asia. Satan is an external being who is obsessed with economic problems. With its own economic problems in mind, America is employing a policy of restraint, based on its trade laws, to keep Japan from entering its markets. In this way, America is putting the brakes on countries in the Pacific realm, especially Japan, Korea, Malaysia, Taiwan and India. You should know that at this critical time in the last days, America is approaching the point where it may make a grave error. P. 1948. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 1.3.

When you observe the Western world, America was born from Britain, and thus it is like her son. But America, who is like a son, dominates Britain. That event signals the end of the Western world. That is how I see it. This is why these three nations America, Great Britain, the greatest oceanic island power, and France, the archangel nation had to come together. At that time, the oceanic power, together with America, would pull the archangel nation in, and take the helm to occupy the land. You must understand this as the reason for the Second World War. The Adam nation, not the Eve nation, must control the Eve nation and the archangel nation. Only then can God's providence actually move forward to occupy the continent.

When Britain and France joined together to become one centering on America, they should have then gone towards the continent. The Second World War broke out in order to occupy the continent. You should be aware of the fact that a foundation was made during the Second World War that enabled the victorious realm, centering on America, Great Britain and France, to control the entire world. P. 1949. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.1.

As you all know, Queen Elizabeth I of England strengthened her maritime policy, leading eventually to the occupation of numerous places in the world, especially in Asia and Africa. God influenced her to take such actions. P. 1950. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.2.

England had inherited the pirate spirit from Rome, going out into the ocean, stealing and occupying everywhere. That is why, when you connect this to God's providence, God used the British people because His providential outlook is to employ the tactics of quickly bringing salvation to the world. But the British people did not align themselves with that outlook and fell away in a self-centered direction. That is why Great Britain is isolated today. P. 1950. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.2.

England inherited Roman civilization and expanded its global domain, centering on the ocean. God had them dominate the world. "You, island nation, conquer the world!" That was God's will. P. 1951. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.2.

The providence that led to the British Empire began when Henry VIII ignored the punitive actions taken against him by the Vatican in Rome due to his divorce and his establishing of the Church of England under his own supervision. At this time, the center of God's providence shifted from the Italian peninsula, where the corrupt Vatican in Rome that was going against God's will was located, to the island nation of England that was revitalized by the Anglican Church. P. 1951. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.2.

God disseminated the Christian faith by having the mission headquarters established in Britain, which at that time was a nation with a foundation to expand around the world by means of the oceans. P. 1952. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.2.

Anybody who fails in providential history is never used again. P. 1953. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.2.

What is the completion of God's providence? It will be completed when Adam and Eve are perfected, and the three archangels surrounding them become one. What has happened now is that America, China, and the Soviet Union have become the three archangels.

Adam is Korea, and Eve is Japan, and this still stands. The original world would be one where Adam and Eve and the three archangels are one. But the angelic world and Eve joined together and expelled Adam. The three archangels and Eve became one, and expelled Adam from the original Eden.

To indemnify this, Japan, America, and Germany should have become one after the Second World War, but this did not happen. That is why this needs to be indemnified again at this time. In Asia, Japan and Korea are enemies. These enemy nations must become one. P. 1953-4. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.1.

We must march forward without resting for ten or even a hundred years in order to reach our goals. If we fail to achieve them in our generation, then we must achieve them without fail even if our effort is extended through the second and third

generations. When the global wave comes sweeping in, national victory will be determined depending on the number of people who jump into that wave. P. 1954-5. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.1.

The reason Japan was able to become a global economic empire in just forty-seven years is not because Japan excelled in some way. It was because she was chosen as the Eve nation. Since Eve became a comprehensive base for recovering all creation that was lost, Japan came to wield worldwide economic power. That is also how it was with Germany and America. P. 1956. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.2.

...the worship of numerous gods does not even fall under Satan. P. 1957. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.2.

Centering on Mother, Japanese women and Korean women are like Cain and Abel. From the position of having restored the right of the eldest son, Korean women are in the position of the elder sister. Yet in the course of restoration, they are like the realm of Abel. That is why Japanese women should be absolutely obedient to Korean women while going through hardships. That is the realm of liberation for the satanic world. Therefore, Japanese women should become good examples in the Unification Church and establish a tradition of becoming a model for those women that return. Otherwise, they will not be able to fulfill the mission of the Eve nation in the last days. P. 1965. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.3.

How did Japan become such a powerful nation? Satan knows what happens during the course of fulfilling God's will. Since Satan knew that in the last days God's providence returns centering on the Korean peninsula, he did horrible things to the Korean people for forty years.

That is why he brutally murdered Queen Min, the Empress of the Chosun Dynasty. In that way, Satan completely occupied Korea. This is why the Japanese proclaimed, "Japan-Korea Unity!" signifying that Japan and Korea were one nation. Since Satan knew that God's providence was to unfold centering on the Korean peninsula, he captured it and tried to swallow the nation. Using that strategy, the Korean peninsula was ruled by Japan for forty years. P. 1967. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.3.

Furthermore, the independence of Korea is a restoration of the failure of the people of Israel. That is why Israel and Korea both regained their nations together in 1948. P. 1970. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 1.1.

Didn't I say peninsular civilization developed as a double culture, and that the Korean peninsula should come to mind whenever a volcano erupts in Japan? That is why I have been telling you to make boats. Have you built them yet? That may happen. For this reason, the Japanese and the Americans should not be arrogant. If they behave arrogantly on both sides of the Pacific Ocean, God will not spare either one. Both America and Japan will be struck. I do not pray for this to happen, but it is reasonable to conclude that such a situation would inevitably happen if Japan were to make a mistake. It is a valid statement when considering the historical judgment between good and evil. P. 1970. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 1.1.

The world was to be unified centering on the Papal court in Rome, the peninsular civilization. However, since the Vatican did not fulfill its responsibility, the providence was expanded to Britain. When this returns in a circle, it must come through Japan, an island nation. Japan succeeds Britain's cultural sphere. That is why Japan's era of prosperity lasted for 120 years from 1868 to 1988. The 120-year period, covering the Meiji, Taisho, and Showa eras, is just like the 120-year period covering the reigns of King Saul, King David, and King Solomon. Emperor Hirohito died in January 1989, didn't he? It was exactly 120 years. P. 1970. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 1.1.

In what kind of position is the Korean peninsula? It occupies the same position as Rome. It is in the same position as the Roman Vatican. Then what kind of nation is Korea? It is destined to become a nation that can harmonize all religions and humankind throughout the ages, in accordance to God's will, and also bear the responsibility of building a unified world and unified Kingdom of Heaven. P. 1973. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 1.2.

Originally, when Jesus appeared, China and India were both cultural and religious nations. The cultural spheres centering on Hinduism and Buddhism had the responsibility to absorb the Roman Empire by forming a trinity when Jesus came. If the Jewish nation and Arab realm in the Middle East had become one, they would have naturally connected to India. In terms of race, the people of India belong to the European line. Asia would have connected with India and then India could have connected with China through Burma. If these spheres had combined with China's religious civilization and assimilated Rome on a global domain, then a unified Kingdom of Heaven could have been created on earth. P. 1975-6. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 1.2.

In the future, the entire Korean peninsula should become a holy ground. Shouldn't we recover the Liaotung peninsula in Manchuria that used to be Korean territory? The people of Israel sold Jesus and then recovered their nation. Then do you believe that I, who live with the title of returning Lord, would not be able to recover our native land? Even if the Soviet Union were to obstruct my way, I would push right through it. I think we should enter negotiations to recover parts of our native land which belonged to us during the former Sung dynasty and which was taken away by the Soviet Union. P. 1977-8. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.2.

Communism must collapse. The democratic world should also collapse. The democratic world is based on humanism, whereas the communist world is based on materialism. Both have driven God away. The Vatican in Rome tried to bring about the unification of the world, centering on theism, and establish an ideal kingship. Due to its mistakes, however, the providence has come back here and they must be overcome through indemnity.

Indemnity had to be paid in Britain, centering on the continent, and the mistakes of the Vatican in Rome on the Italian peninsula must be brought to Asia and restored there. Consequently, a peninsula in Asia, like that of Italy, should be restored. That is the Korean peninsula. P. 1980. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.2.

This is not my individual thought. It is the view of the Divine Principle. The unification of the Korean peninsula will automatically come about. Korea should embrace Eve and they will become one. Only then will the archangels completely dedicate themselves to Adam and Eve. This is the viewpoint of the Principle. P. 1981. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.2.

Who is the one that divided this country into North and South? It was Japan. That is why the funds for the reunification of North and South Korea must be supplied by Japan. P. 1983. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.3.

Jacob offered all his possessions he had prepared for 21 years amidst hardships in order to inherit Esau's rights of the eldest son. Esau was not happy to hand over the blessed rights of the eldest son, but by handing over the blessings from the position of a brother, the Israel kingship was established. P. 1984. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.3.

Now the day is drawing near when all the world religions will unite. The day for the reunification of North and South Korea on the Korean peninsula is drawing near. P. 1985. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.3.

The world is now faced with the religious problem in Israel, in the Middle East, and the problem between North and South Korea on the Korean peninsula based on democracy and communism. That is why if a third world war were to break out due to a collision between these two camps with different religious and ideological backgrounds, humankind would face complete destruction. P. 1985. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.3.

Hitler of Germany believed in the destruction of Christianity. Hitler's ideology was to destroy everything that was spiritual and ideological, based on his belief of the superiority of the Aryan race. And Italy, which wavered back and forth, was in the position of the archangel. Germany and Italy stood in the position of two sons before the satanic and evil mother. The Second World War was a war to clear this away on the worldwide level. Since it was sown in this way, in autumn the husks should be cut away. The Second World War cut all that away and unified everything into a Christian cultural sphere under the realm of one owner. P. 1986. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.4.1.

America is about to collapse. P. 1986. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.4.1.

When the three archangels receive the original rights of inheritance by uniting with God and the Adam and Eve nations, then the positions of God, Adam and Eve, and the three archangels in the Garden of Eden on the individual level before the Fall can finally be restored through indemnity on the world level. When True Parents are designated there, the devil's powers and influence will disappear in the places where the True Parents' name exists. Since that time has now come, I am proclaiming the True Parents to the world. P. 1988. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.4.1.

From a providential point of view, the United States is a warehouse keeper, not the owner. It has everything: a warehouse of knowledge, armed forces, material and science and technology. She is not the owner, but the manager. That is why America should distribute all this for the sake of the world. But America is making a fuss about keeping it all for itself. Heaven controls this warehouse. This warehouse is being moved to Asia.

At this time, Japan has taken over all of this. Isn't that so? Japan is the Eve nation. Therefore, Japan must become one with the archangel to recover what was lost. Eve is doing this for Adam. After doing this, where should it go? It should return to Adam. America will perish now if it abandons Korea. Carter lost the presidency because he did just that. P. 1988. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.4.1.

For seven years after the independence of Korea, I endeavored to fulfill my responsibility of bringing together Christianity. That great man, who can stand proud on behalf of history, has now become a frail man of seventy and has returned by going through a forty-year course of indemnity. That is why, since the Adam nation and Eve nation united, America stands as the archangel on the heavenly side, while communist China stands as the archangel of Asia, and the Soviet Union stands as the archangel of the communist party. When these three archangels that resisted God's will are brought to natural submission, and when they get in line with Korea, then the age of the peace kingdom shall arrive. This will be the time when the lineage of the satanic world can be rooted out of our world and replaced with the lineage of the heavenly nation. P. 1991. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.4.2.

The unity of China, America, and the Soviet Union, centered on me, is like the unity between the three angels centering on Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eve. When this happens, God's providence will be completed. P. 1991. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.4.2.

What this means is that Korea and Japan are the Adam and Eve nations, respectively, and the three archangels consist of the archangel of Asia, the Christian archangel on the heavenly side, and the archangel on Satan's side on the world level. These three archangels come together to take away Eve. If Adam and Eve are ensnared again, it will be the death of the world. If that happens, it will surely be the end. P. 1991. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.4.2.

If Jesus had not died, he would have had to embrace China and India as if they were his two sons. P. 1992. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.4.3.

All other worthless and good-for-nothing ideologies should be done away with. Such ideologies have appeared over the course of time, confusing the world. P. 1993. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.5.1.

Then how did these peoples come to have different languages? God separated our early human ancestors because of the Fall. P. 1994. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.5.1.



What would the ideal Kingdom of Heaven be like? It would be the place where people all over the world would live like Unification Church members. This is the kingdom on earth. The kingdom on earth would be where every person adopted our way of living. P. 1994. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.5.1.

There is no doubt that the Kingdom of God is a place governed according to the will of God. It is governed by the sovereignty held by His children of direct descent, centering on Him and following the commands issued by Him. In such a place, democracy or communism cannot exist. Once it is established, the kingdom would remain eternally. P. 1995. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.5.1.

At the same time, the Unification Church should also be able to take these ideologies into its arms and move them horizontally towards unity. It should strive for a transcendent form of existence, based on a spiritual awareness that can move them vertically as well, centering on religion. P. 1998. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.5.2.

Without a nation, all our work will be in vain. The crucifix, culture and institutions of today's Christianity, which have all been handed down from the earliest days, should be thrown in the river or burnt to ashes if they cannot create a nation desired by God. Christians should understand they are being mocked and ridiculed by Satan. Therefore, you should realize that the real issue at hand is building the nation of God. P. 1999. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.5.2.

When we have a nation that is better than the satanic nations of the fallen world, only then can we receive love from God. At present, we are receiving love from God by proxy. Until now, we have not been eligible to receive love directly from God. Though we can receive love from True Parents, we will have to establish a nation before we can receive love directly from God. Satan and his fallen nations are still in existence. So, we need to climb high above Satan's world. P. 1999. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.5.2.

No matter how large a nation may be, it should bear resemblance to the structure of human beings. This is because God likes everything to take after His image. That is why the ideal nation should resemble humankind. It would resemble the ideal person of heaven and earth. P. 2000. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.5.2.

### **Book 13 – RESTORATION OF THE TRUE GOD'S HOMELAND**

The mission of religious people has been the creation of a homeland, but they often still maintain the selfish desire for personal salvation. P. 2007. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 1.

We need to create an impetus for one unified language. You read the record of everything True Parents have accomplished, but to read this in translation is a disgrace. It will become your shame in the spirit world. When you go to the spirit world, you might have to pay indemnity for thousands or tens of thousands of years. That is how great a problem this is. Even if the homeland has been restored, people who cannot go over this hill will have no path upon which they can return to their hometown. They will have no certificate of residence that enables them to dwell in their homeland as registered citizens. This is a serious problem. P. 2007-8. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 1.

We long for the nation of God, because it is a place of love. It is a place where, instead of temporary love, eternal love that transcends time can continually exist. It is also a place where you can elevate yourself and be recognized for 100 percent of your value. It is the place where you are eternally happy. This is why all people are yearning for the heavenly nation. P. 2008. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.

It is sad to be a citizen of a country with no sovereignty. Jesus was very concerned about this point. He told people not to worry about where their food, drink or clothes would come from; that these are the matters that the ungodly are always concerned about. He said, "Our Father in heaven knows that you need all these things. Instead, above everything else, be concerned with his Kingdom and with what He requires, and He will provide you with all these other things." Did Jesus say save your son first, or save the nation first? He said to save the nation that God is seeking. P. 2009. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.

Without a nation, no matter how good or happy your family is, evil people can destroy it. P. 2009. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.

If the country that God seeks does not appear, then the Christian world and all civilizations will be sent down the river and burned up. P. 2010. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.

Do you think that Satan, who has played havoc with God for six thousand years, will simply say, "Oh my goodness, I'm losing ground," and turn around, bow his head and go home? You think it is a waste to throw out an old cleaning rag, don't you? You would probably turn it over and check the smell before you throw it out. Satan is not going to retreat easily. He will doggedly fight to the end. P. 2011. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 2.

Unificationists must go out in their bare feet, if necessary, to create the homeland. Your leftover resources are not enough to save this nation. You cannot save this nation by focusing on what food to eat, what clothes to wear and what car to drive. In the Unification Church, we determine to pioneer with our bare hands and feet. That is the type of work our church is doing. P. 2011. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 2.

Today's followers of the Unification Church need to be more fiercely and fully united with me than the core representatives of the Communist party are united with Kim Il-sung. If you are unable to achieve this level of unity with me, you will not be able to accomplish God's will to restore the nation God is seeking. P. 2013. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 3.

The path that True Mother walks should absolutely not be as difficult as mine. Opposition from men poses no problem for me on my path as the true Father, but there should be no women who oppose True Mother in her course. We need women to be the bridge for the sake of liberation, for the course of the mother; for this they must be able to offer support and totally sacrifice themselves, quickly going the way to restore independence to the homeland, liberate heaven and earth, and liberate God. P. 2015. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 4.

You must invest your own family in order to connect to the global family. P. 2017. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 5.

In the heavenly world of the future, the time for living off a monthly salary will pass away. P. 2018. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 5.

Dying and going to the spirit world is not death but a way to seek God's love. It is not dying. It is the way to find God's love. God made the path of death for the sake of love. If your heart and mind cannot hold onto this higher level, then you cannot restore love. P. 2019. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 5.

We have now entered a new age. What kind of attitude should we have? The conviction to restore independence to our homeland more than anything else should be burning in your chest. In other words, you should become the standard-bearers for building the homeland that God has been impatiently awaiting for the past six thousand years. You should take pride in being a pioneer in the special forces sent into battle as the advance guard to reclaim the land and take responsibility for this incredible mission.

Many people who have come and gone wanted to have this mission and had this hope. Even though they wanted it, they could not have it. This is one special mission that can be done only once, at this time in history. It requires a solemn sense of responsibility. Eating, sleeping, your comings and goings; every aspect of your lifestyle must be for the establishment of the homeland.

How long do you think God has been waiting impatiently for you, as a secret emissary sent by God, to come forward and determine to carry out this mission in a high-spirited and exciting way?

Until now we have been driven out. Heaven's will has never once had the chance to gain a foothold in a nation and fully manifest its substance. We must fulfill God's will to create a homeland. Until now, that will has not been accomplished even once. Now we can establish that kind of homeland. In that homeland there will be sovereignty, territory and people. Also, the lineage connects the people as a unified people in that nation, giving them a history that other peoples cannot have. P. 2019. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 6.

You should leave a testament to your descendants saying, "God is our God. We are His sons and daughters. We have lived until now to restore our homeland. Even if the world hunts us and drives us out, we will not perish, and we will see the day of recompense before we die. Even if I die and cannot achieve this, then you will see that day before your death!" P. 2019. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 6.

The person representing God, Satan, and all of history must decide when the required indemnity conditions have been established. Because he had not made that decision, even if you had gone to your Home Church and said, "I completely offer Home Church on the global altar," God could not accept it, nor could Satan approve it. P. 2021. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

Home Church is the destiny of all people. It will enable them to cast off the inheritance of the Fall. If we cannot fulfill Home Church during our lifetime, we will have to continue to invest in it even after we die. P. 2021. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

You should know that this is Home Church. It is *Gajeong Gyohae*. P. 2022. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

All of you should inherit all of True Parents' victories and establish a condition that claims you have gone to the world level even though you didn't actually go there. What is the condition called? It is called Home Church. P. 2022. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

If the original standard of the family is set up, embracing all tribes, then the failed family in Israel can be restored to an unfallen standard for the first time. Tribal messiahs and Jesus will witness this. P. 2023. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

Home Church is completed when you take ownership to reform the culture of Adam and assume leadership to create a new culture. When you do that you can become a true descendant of Adam. Then, what is the center? The center is the standard of heart. What kind of heart would that be? God should not sense from you the heart that feels, "I fell. I am not a restored child." God should be able to look at you and say, "My child, whom I love!" P. 2023. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

When we are totally determined to say "I am victorious" in a way that both God and Satan attest to, the True Parents can pass everything on to you for you to inherit. P. 2023. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

Home Church is the treasure I am leaving behind for you after going the way of sacrifice throughout my life. P. 2023. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

Yet in the Home Church I created, there is no religion and no providence of God. It is the place where the people of Heaven live. P. 2024. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

If you want to transfer all the offerings from all the victorious altars throughout the world, you must build your own altar beforehand. So where is the place where you can transfer these offerings? That is the place we call Home Church! P. 2024. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

How much has God suffered? How much has Jesus suffered, and how much have I suffered? Through all this suffering and effort, I possess the altar of victory. I want to hand it over to you. Home Church is for you to build up an altar and take over these things. P. 2024. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

When Jesus died in Golgotha, there was not even one person who had compassion for him. I would be happy if, at the moment I was going to die, there was a foundation and environment of many people showing me compassion. If I were going to die, you would not run away like Peter. You would say, "I will die instead." When I think of the fact that there are members like that on this earth, I feel that shameful historical tradition has been restored. P. 2024. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 1.

Mark this date, November 12, 1978, because today I am instructing you to go to your Home Church areas in the role of a Messiah. What will you do then? Those of you, who will go out, raise your hands. From now on you should go there. You must know that you cannot come back until you fulfill Home Church. You cannot come back before you die. You cannot come back even spiritually. P. 2025. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 2.

Home Church is the beginning point of the complete breakdown of Satan's base that he has secured through the satanic world. If I was unable to declare Home Church, history would be destined to a dismal fate. The mission of Home Church is a limitless blessing for you. P. 2026. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 2.

Christianity will not be the one to establish the original world. It is been this way for the last thirty-three years. Today, we cross over into a new world where there will be no Christianity. Even religion will disappear. What will they call us? They will call us Home Church. Only Home Church will remain, as a family centering on the True Parents. P. 2027. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 2.

You are alive for a short time. Life is too short. When faced with the problem of whether or not you can make a breakthrough before you die, you should think like this, "If you can extend my life even a little bit, I will give all the power I have." You should be thinking like this, but you look like you are just spectators. P. 2028. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 2.

From now on, I will suspend or dissolve all the organizations that hinder Home Church. The Home Church movement is the priority. After that, all other work is incidental; P. 2028. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 2.

On the Home Church altar you can restore every mistake made by your parents. P. 2028. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

If Abel does not save Cain, then they cannot go to their parents. What is the Home Church we are doing in the Unification Church? It is the providence to restore your own tribe after you have restored Cain's tribe. Have you made the effort to restore Cain's tribe? If the Cain and Abel tribes do not become one, they can't rise up to the level of the race. There is no way for them to go up to that level. This is the principle. P. 2029. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

The death of Jesus was due to Zachariah's family. Who was John the Baptist? He was Jesus' brother. They were from different wombs, but they were brothers. P. 2029. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.1.

All the members of the Unification Church should purchase thirty Divine Principle books, lend one out each day, and receive one back each day. If you lend each book out for a week, then you can pass them out to 120 homes. Think about what will happen if 120 houses read that book. When you pass them out, you can gently give them some introductory content. You can lend them videotapes after they read the book. P. 2032. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.

Even if the opposition is rampant, everything can be finished in seven years. If you invest completely like I have, you can finish Home Church within seven years. What does that mean? It means that all the world's problems will be solved in seven years. If our Unification Church members spread throughout the world, and if each of you works with 360 houses, it becomes a simple process. P. 2033. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.

Once the Home Church foundation is set up, since you are responsible for 360 homes, you should first work with 10 to 20 homes in your neighborhood. You then assign each of these families another 15 homes. By overlapping, our efforts will be doubled or tripled. P. 2034. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.2.

First, you must choose an area of 360 houses for your Home Church. If you do not decide on the 360 homes of the Home Church altar, the principled significance disappears, and it cannot become the conditional altar that would allow spirit world to return to earth. That is why it is important to choose 360 homes first. If you do not decide the altar of 360 homes first, before everything else, you cannot establish the meaning of Home Church. P. 2036. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 4.1.

If you are victorious in Home Church, what will that make you? When that time comes, you will be messiahs. You will become tribal messiahs, and from there you will be the persons responsible to face the people and save them. P. 2036. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 4.2.

How do you reach perfection? All of you have parents, children, and things of creation. Home Church is the place to develop these things. Because Adam fell, he lost these three things. We must find these three things and offer them to God. We should find what was lost and offer it through the True Parents to God. We need to go through God. We have to find the things that were lost, offer them up to God, and inherit them again from Him, as our parents. You should know that if you offer everything to God, your house will be built and your world will come about. The foundation for that is Home Church. This is a sacrifice. This is an altar, a place where you present your three offerings. P. 2036-7. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 4.2.

If there is no Home Church, then we cannot create heaven. If there is no Home Church, then nothing will get done. Home Church is the base of heaven. P. 2037. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 4.2.

When I return, the nation should welcome me. The time has come when I should be welcomed. Since the nation has been unable to do this, I am holding the men here accountable. Fourteen years ago, I ordered you to do Home Church. Is there anyone here who has done that? It has taken fourteen years to do that. I have talked about Home Church since 1978, and it has already been seven years since the start of the *tong ban gyeokpa* (local level breakthrough) mission, but you have all failed. The church exists for the sake of the nation and the world. However, you have only taken hold of your families and yourselves, and pushed the church to the back and out of the way, haven't you? P. 2038. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 4.2.

The lifestyle of just suffering in the wilderness course will not do anymore. We must get victory over it. P. 2038. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 4.2.

You must determine your position within the organized realm. If you don't have a position, then there is nowhere for you to sit down. You can push ahead only after your position has been decided. You will be able to see how your position is developing, based on your effort. Deciding the position is an important part of strengthening the power of the organization. P. 2047. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 2.

In July of this year, all the Unification Church members should do forty days of witnessing. This time period was set up traditionally from 1956 as the time period for training people to inherit the spirit of pioneering. P. 2048. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 3.

The place where the people of God are born and produced is only on this planet Earth. There are no people living on other stars or planets. P. 2053. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 4.

When I went into North Korea from South Korea and then returned three years later, I remember that it took me over five years to shake off the habits I formed in North Korea. P. 2056. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 4.

If three tribes can be connected to each other, then a people will be formed. P. 2070. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 5.5.

We have passed out flags and pictures of True Parents to some eighty thousand families. Then, from July 3 to 9 (1992), I made the declaration of the True Parents, the Savior, the Messiah, and the returning Lord. Who is the Lord at the Second Advent? It is the True Parents. Who is the Messiah? The Messiah is the returning Lord. P. 2071. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 5.5.

If you work day and night through the words of love and the practice of love, then even while the grandfathers and grandmothers sit around smoking and drinking, and doing other bad deeds, they will say, "My son and daughter should model themselves after that person." P. 2072. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 5.5.

I'm telling you again to put up pictures of True Parents. That is the position where you become one with True Parents directions, so you will live, just like the people who looked at the snake Moses held up on a stick. People who look at the Unification Church flag and curse it will later develop problems with their eyes and all sorts of things will happen to them. The reason it hasn't happened yet is because you haven't raised your flags with true devotion. Also, when you put up True Parents' picture, if you can truly devote your heart before doing that, then if someone points a finger at it in scorn, that finger will be bent. All sorts of strange things may happen. It is because you haven't devoted all your heart that it hasn't happened that way. P. 2072. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 5.5.

I didn't give even one penny. It's no good if I give money. If I supply the money, then in the future, the way the nation must go will become blocked. It's logical that money should come from the nation to the people. That kind of nation does not exist. Therefore, no matter how difficult, the members of the Unification Church must do the work of the nation, even if they must sell their sweat and blood; even if they must cut off their flesh and bones and sell them, they must do the work of the nation. P. 2074. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 6.

None of you know when I will send down a certain command and give you a mission. If you say you can't do it, then I am putting you in prison. This isn't a playground. This is the path to decide life and death. It is not the grounds for getting a salary and living well. It is not the place to bring no-goods and feed them. You need to understand this. This is the place to make the elite fighting unit of heaven. P. 2077. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 6.

World unification will automatically be fulfilled after the unification of North and South Korea is accomplished. P. 2082. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 1.

Using South Korean military power to force North Korea to submit is not the way. We should have an ideological foundation that is stronger than theirs. We should have the ability to naturally inspire the North to surrender and have the philosophy of loving our nation more than they love theirs and of loving God more than they love communism. Otherwise, we will not be able to win the heart of North Korea. Based on our character, we should impress them with our character, our outlook on life, our lifestyle, and personal history. Unless we can surpass them, we can't win over those armed with the ideology of communism. P. 2084. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 1.

The teaching, "Love your enemy," is the great truth. Although the content is simple, no one has known that this would become the dividing line between God and Satan. P. 2084. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 1.

I have proclaimed the era of tribal messiahship. Do you know why I had to do this? It is because Korea betrayed me. P. 2085. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.

Do you know why I have proclaimed tribal messiahship to both Korea and the world? It is because I have returned to Korea and have now connected Korea to all the nations. Imagine the mobilization of spirits in the spirit world, whose eyes are wide open in anticipation of liberation and who are saying that it's the right time to return to earth to indemnify

thousands or tens of thousands of years of history. So if I do not lay down all these bridges to connect the spirit world to earth, would that be right? Because everything has collapsed, there is no place for me to stand. In order to create a place, I had to send out Blessed Families as tribal messiahs and have them set up three-generation ancestral standards: perfection of Jesus, perfection of oneself, and perfection of Adam. This foundation created an environment upon which I could stand. This is why I have proclaimed tribal messiahship. The unification of North and South Korea does not just happen automatically. It is possible only after all these things are tied together. Since all these things are connected to the family level and the tribal level, they will then bond to the national level, and the Unification Church and the government should then become one. P. 2085. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.

Jesus was sent alone to become the tribal and national messiah. However, I have proclaimed over twenty-five thousand Blessed Families worldwide as tribal messiahs. Think how great the power of this is. P. 2085. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 2.

I proclaimed tribal messiahship to liberate humankind. This is a worldwide, revolutionary event. It is a special privilege and grace. P. 2086. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.

Nevertheless, the fact that you cannot enter your homeland without finding Cain is a fact of the Principle. P. 2087. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 3.

By combining the victorious, restored features of Judaism, Christianity, and the Unification Church with the blessings of Buddhism, Confucianism and other religions, I am forming a consolidated nucleus. This is your inheritance and the essence of the tribal messiah's position. You do not need to worry about the nation. There is no need for you to worry about the world, either. All you need to worry about is your family. P. 2088. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 3.

Long ago, Jesus sent tribal messiahs to the physical world from the spirit world through a vertical process. However, I dispatched thousands of messiah-like families who can stand as representatives of Heaven in front of their tribe. Now nothing will go wrong. I announced the time of tribal messiahship on January 3, 1989, at 2:30 in the afternoon. P. 2088. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.

What does it mean that I announced that you should become tribal messiahs? It means that God will support you when you fulfill your responsibilities in place of me. P. 2089. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 3.

Although I am an intelligent person and have sacrificed my whole life to complete the mission as the Messiah, I am ashamed of not having sacrificed more. P. 2090. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 3.

Then what should you do when you return to your hometown? You must inspire the people to unite into one with you. The method is simple. Your son should become a teacher who teaches heavenly tradition and shows by example that "The heavenly nation will be realized when you do such and such a thing." And the mother and the father should show other mothers and fathers in the neighborhood that "By this way, the village will become a heavenly one." That is what you must do. It is simple.

You must form a family of love in which the husband loves the wife and the wife loves the husband, the parents love the children and the children love the parents, and you hand it all down. P. 2093. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 4.

You should be aware of the fact that you must go on the path to inherit the tradition that corresponds to you, the tradition for you to become the tribal ancestor. You must set up a tradition for your tribe and family. The twelve tribes will form from now on. Therefore, tradition will be needed. Those who think only of themselves will not be included. P. 2093. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 4.

When you put up the Unification Church flag, it is a signal to the members passing by to enter your house and rest if they are tired or have lunch if they are hungry before they go on. Therefore, you should always be prepared to receive guests. You should make such preparations on behalf of True Parents. That is why you would need a separate room. P. 2095. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 5.2.

When the Israelites were about to leave Egypt, they were able to avoid the calamity of the smiting of the firstborn by smearing the blood of a lamb on their doorposts. In the same way, you can be protected if you carry my picture with you. Spirit world can recognize the picture even if it is in your pocket. This small condition has the same effect as the Israelites smearing the lamb's blood on their doorposts. P. 2096. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 5.2.

If the Savior is coming to save the world, he should not judge humanity with a rod of iron. You cannot make even one person give in by hitting him or her. The sacrificial love of a mother, with hands as rough as a toad's back and fingers so bent from working hard for her children that they cannot be straightened out, can have the power to make the disobedient child repent and come back to the right path. A club will not work. Even for God, who is the mighty king of judgment who leads heaven and earth according to His will, cosmic unification is impossible without true love. Difficulties are not an obstacle in true love. In true love, there is the vigor to go forward at the sacrifice of one's own life. P. 2097-8. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 5.3.

We will fail if people say, "In the Unification Church, the words are good, but the people are bad." Did I give you only words? No, I did not just speak. I have done all the things that I am teaching you now. Therefore, there should be no doubt about them. I am teaching by creating a system of thought that is free of inconsistency and contradiction in both its intellectual and the practical aspects. No one can say anything about that. Both Satan and God approve of it. P. 2098. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 5.3.

True Parents' words are eternal; they transcend time and space. Therefore, God's words transcend history. They transcend time periods, principles, and ideologies. They are more precious than the words of others. These words, whether you listen to them at night or during the day or read them at night or during the day, flow into your heart endlessly. You must seek for such words. P. 2098. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 5.3.

What is my bitter sorrow? I failed to fulfill my duty as a filial son; I should have cried and pleaded with my parents to join the Unification Church. I am trying to resolve this through you. I could not even witness to my family. P. 2098. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 5.3.

My words are not spoken by me. I did not say them; they are words spoken by God through me. Your hearts will start to move no matter where and when you hear them. There will be a great revolution within your body when the heart is inspired. There is such power in those words. P. 2099. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 5.4.

Try talking about the Divine Principle of the Unification Church until it makes you sick to even think about it. When you think that you will try until you get sick of it, you will find out how interesting and exciting it is. P. 2100. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 5.4.

I don't enjoy watching you suffer. You should keep in mind that God has been preparing, with painful efforts and devotion, to bless you unconditionally. Glory comes only when you receive the inheritance in that place. Isn't this so? Glory comes only when you inherit from your enemy. God dwells there. Since it has been spread through the cross, it must be reaped by going the way of the cross again. You should know this. Since it was spread through suffering, it must be reaped through suffering. P. 2104. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

If someone wants a great nation and yet is idle, just eating and sleeping and acting like others and saying, "Let's have a great nation. How splendid it is!" he must be a successor of the devil. If you want to have a great tribe, people and nation, you should be able to invest not just your own family, but your whole clan. P. 2105. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

Sons and daughters should not live for their own sakes. In serving heaven and earth and humankind as themselves, they should be sons and daughters who must inherit a stronger and higher tradition. This is how it should be. No one can complain. This is why not just anyone can be the successor to the founder of the Unification Church. They should be sons and daughters who can inherit the lineage and live according to the tradition of living for the sake of others. They should be sons and daughters who are at a higher level and who can do better than their own mothers and fathers. Unless they have lived for and served others, how can the sons and daughters say they have surpassed their parents? Those who are inconsistent will not succeed. We need the eldest child to live for the sake of others even more than high level sons and daughters do in order for him to receive the inheritance. P. 2106. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

You should not return home to live a comfortable life alone. Upon your return you should first organize the church. Your sons and daughters should not be objects of public scorn. They should not be beggars relying on others for their livelihood. You should assist them with their living situations and teach them the new tradition which was created by shedding blood and sweat in order to establish a foundation of truth and justice. P. 2106. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

We inherit in the name of heaven and by heaven's command. We do not inherit democratically. This would lead to ruin. Seats in the national assembly and the ruling party are not decided by the power and influence of political parties alone. The tradition of the country should be established. It works based on commands, so we should be able to receive commands. This is the way society should be. P. 2106. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

This is why children must obey their parents in the family. Since parents' love is in the highest position, the sons and daughters who long for that love will obey them for a thousand and ten thousand years and will be happy to wander about through mountains and valleys in order to inherit that love. You must continue the tradition of loving your parents even if you are showered in smelly manure. Your parents' words, "Practice filial piety," are words that lead you to the position where you can inherit the love you can be proud of for eternity. This is how it should be. P. 2107. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

The greatest gift I can leave behind to this world when I depart is my words. They cannot be bought or sold for anything in heaven and earth. P. 2107. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 2.

With love, unification will be automatically achieved. If we love at a higher level than Satan, Satan will also be pulled in. P. 2108. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 3.

If South Korea excels in all fields including economics, living standard and education, and stands in the position of giving eternally, the North Koreans will unite with us even if they are told not to. P. 2108. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 3.

Unification cannot be achieved when we are indebted. There is no unification in indebtedness. If we are indebted, the Kingdom of Heaven cannot be realized. If we are indebted, there is no way to prosper. P. 2109. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 3.

A true original root and a true original bud based on true love are needed. Buds like you will not do. You must shed blood, sweat and tears. And for the sake of God, the earth, and your hometown, you must practice a love that is greater than that ever known by the countless people who have lived on this earth. Only then will the proper root grow in you. P. 2109. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 3.

From now on twelve tribes will be organized. This is why we need a tradition. Those who are thinking about themselves will be excluded from here. P. 2110. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 3.

Up until the present, you have lived as you pleased. Now things are serious, however. You are responsible for whether you are losers or winners. That responsibility does not lie with me, but with you. P. 2110. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 4.

Until now, Satan and devils have divided and ruled over the earth. But now good spirits will wrest those areas away from them and take control over them. For this reason, Unification Church members should do Home Church activities even if they have to shed their blood, sweat and tears. We should offer our utmost devotion. We should pray with ardent hearts, more earnestly than the devotion shown by Christianity, or any other religion including Islam and Buddhism. P. 2111. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 5.

If you work with absolute devotion to the altar of Home Church while on earth, spirits from various backgrounds and levels will return to earth and assist the earthly believers. P. 2112. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 5.

You should know this hard and fast rule that you must work with greater devotion than that shown by loyal subjects, patriots, children of filial piety, and former church ministers who were born in your hometown. If you work with more intensity, they will all help you from the spirit world. This is the condition you need to make. P. 2112. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 5.

Without following my directions, it (spirit world) will not cooperate with you no matter how talented or how able you may be. If you were to do something I do not want or do something I did not give direction for, it will not work. Heaven will retreat because of it. The help of the spirit world will not materialize. P. 2112. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 5.

At last we are entering the age in which the good spirits in the spirit world can finally settle on earth. So when you join the Unification Church and participate in its activities, your good ancestors will live together with you and assist you. P. 2113. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 5.

If God is thinking like this, why wouldn't the spirit world assist you? It is the same. It is because you are still self-centered. I have warned you about being self-centered. These days, when my legs get stiff, I say, "You stupid legs, I have to go!" If I am doing this, should you young people stay idle? You brats, you deserve heavenly punishment. P. 2113-4. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 5.

When the Unification Church mobilizes, Mohammed will help; so will all the representatives of Confucianism and Buddhism, and so will God. P. 2115. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 5.

The past age was the age of good spirits, including angels, in the spirit world. The present age is the age of the True Parents. And the future age is the age of God. This is why those who do not have achievements to mobilize the spirit world, mobilize the True Parents, and mobilize God will be unable to enter the Kingdom of Heaven. P. 2115. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 5.

Now, the spirit world will help you only if you do Home Church activities. P. 2115. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 5.

We are at a point of time when we cannot hope to achieve world peace or one unified world using human power, wisdom, culture or anything else. Under these circumstances, what is the main problem? I believe that answering the question as to whether God exists or not is the most important issue. Once all humankind clearly understands all about God's existence, they will clearly understand the direction of God's will. When they understand this, the world will become one world, a world of peace and an ideal world. P. 2116. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 6.1.

Religion does not only encompass globalism. It does not just seek to benefit human beings, but also seeks to benefit God. But communism and democracy only seek to benefit human beings. So which philosophy is better, the one that benefits God as well or the one that only seeks to benefit human beings? Which philosophy is better, the one in which both God and human beings rejoice or the one in which only servants rejoice among themselves, without their master? This is why religion is so good. P. 2116. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 6.1.

Are there borders in the heavenly nation? There are not. Are there two languages in the heavenly nation? No. Are there racial differences? No, there are none. P. 2117. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 6.1.

In a nation, the ruler's value lies not in the exercise of his sovereignty but in serving his people, and the people exist for the sake of the nation rather than for themselves. If this is attained, the nation will become the Kingdom of Heaven. P. 2117-8. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 6.1.

You cannot just go directly in front of the True Parents. You have a different lineage, do you not? Before you are registered, you cannot receive the right of inheritance. You have not been registered yet. Are you registered in my family tree? You do not get registered just because you are blessed. You receive the Blessing at the top of the growth stage. You still have another seven years in the completion stage. P. 2118. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 6.2.

Without going through Home Church, you cannot be entered on the list. You cannot become part of the family tree of the heavenly kingdom. You will be excluded even if you are a Blessed Family. You will be excluded. With this understanding, you must hurry to do everything which Heaven mandates. You do not do it simply because someone else is doing it. It must be done. If you were to go to the spirit world without having done Home Church, you would have to work at it for eternity in the spirit world. It will be a huge problem if you were to go there without taking care of your Home Church on earth. P. 2118. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 6.2.

If you do not repent, you will face public prosecution. There is no one who can stand in front of the governing law of love. At the time of prosecution, the material supporting your defense has to be greater than the material being used to accuse you with God, me, my family, clan, leaders and everyone in the Unification Church who are teaching you, standing as

your lawyers. Only then will you be able to be registered as people of the heavenly kingdom. If the evidence in support is less than the evidence against, you will not be registered. P. 2119. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 6.2.

The time is coming when we will be registered in the Republic of Korea; the Unification Church will establish the Republic of Korea as its homeland. There will come a time when everyone who has hitherto been mobilized can buy a piece of land in the Republic of Korea. This is if the Republic of Korea follows me. There will come a time when you will have to sell everything you have in the West and exchange it even for just a small hut in the Republic of Korea. P. 2119. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 6.2.

Even if you are old and weak to the point of looking out the door and saying, "Alas, I am old," you should still go out witnessing. P. 2119. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 6.2.

The age of registration will come, in which you will join the circle that is connected to my clan and the royal family. But even if the age of registration comes, those who have not restored their tribe cannot be registered here. You should know this. It is the same as the twelve tribes. Without having restored your tribe, you will not be able to register yourself. P. 2120. Right. Ch.5. Sec. 6.2.

The Kingdom of Heaven is not a place that just anyone can enter. Three generations must make the determination to enter there. The stages of the grandmother and grandfather, mother and father, husband and wife, and sons and daughters are four stages and the lines that have the husband and wife are three generations. P. 2123. Left. Ch.5. Sec. 6.2.

These speeches have been translated into twelve languages and published in three hundred volumes. Their contents that I teach are not the result of a comprehensive study of historical documents or scholarly research, but are rather the principles and fundamental answers I arrived at through freely communicating with both the visible and invisible worlds. P. 2124. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 1.

If Jesus Christ had been accepted by the Jewish people two thousand years ago, he would have unified the Jewish tribes and race, and also the Arabic realm inhabited by the descendants of the twelve tribes. Thereupon, his ideology and teachings would have spread through the Middle Eastern region and the Indian region to the Far East. He would then have conquered the Roman Empire and all of Europe and formed a new religious cultural realm in which he would have become the King of all kings. P. 2125. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 1.

How would God reply if Satan asked Him, "God, when You created me as an archangel in the beginning, was it out of love that was ephemeral or eternal?" God would reply that He did so out of a love that was eternal. If He were to say that His love was ephemeral, He would make Himself an ephemeral god. Unless He maintains a standard of loving Satan eternally, there will eventually come a time when He would no longer be able to exercise His authority as God with respect to Satan. Thus, however much Satan may oppose Him, God has no choice other than to establish the basis of loving him. Thus, God is a proponent of the philosophy of non-resistance toward evil. Why is that? It is because, until the world of the heavenly ideal is manifested on earth, God must love the archangel who has become Satan, regardless of the circumstances.

However much trouble Satan may cause, God cannot punish him or cut him off. He must establish the basis of having loved Satan whatever his situation. God can have complete victory only when Satan confesses to Him, saying, "Oh, God really is God. I surrender to You." This is the issue. Since the principled path of the providence of restoration is for God to bring about Satan's surrender by loving him, we who are to become His children must walk this same path. Whether we are persecuted around the world and considered a worldwide enemy, we must establish the basis of having loved those who oppose us. In this regard, God's Word, "Love your enemies," is His strategy to subjugate evil naturally. These words are simple, but no one realized that they have marked the boundary between victory and defeat between God and Satan. If God were to harbor the thought of treating Satan as His enemy and seeking revenge against him, then He would never be able to stand on the pinnacle of victory. On the contrary, He implemented a strategy of love, declaring, "Love your enemy." P. 2125-6. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 1.

If Jesus, while dying on the cross, had harbored any feelings of malice toward his enemies, God's providence would have suffered a total reversal. By overcoming death with a heart of loving his enemies and praying for their blessing, Jesus naturally subjugated Satan. P. 2126. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 1.

I have been developing a movement of loving God and loving even my enemies. We too must develop this movement in our families, societies and nations. Through a heart of love, Christianity subjugated the Roman Empire which severely persecuted it. P. 2126. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 1.

Under the rule of Japan, I had reason to harbor resentment even toward its emperor, but he had already been defeated. Heaven does not strike a person who is defeated, but rather shows mercy toward those who repent of their sins and apologize. As this is Heaven's way, those who raise their sword to strike a defeated person will find their own descendants driven to ruin. P. 2128. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 1.

In other words, we must become able to impress them with how we live. We must be able to amaze those people equipped with communist ideology in terms of our view of life and our standard of character. P. 2128. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 1.

Jesus was particularly remarkable in this regard. In the situation of having no other option but the way of the cross owing to the disbelief of the Jewish people, Jesus realized that the only way for him to live for the sake of God and the people of Israel was for him to die for them. This was the reasoning behind the crucifixion. P. 2129. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 1.



In particular, as history went awry at the beginning due to Eve's error, so in the Last Days women with their motherly love need to take the lead in overcoming conflict and strife in the age of division and create a new history of reconciliation and unity.

It is especially the mission of women to restore young men and women and students, who are in the position of being their children, through true education. Then mothers and their children together should set examples for educating even their husbands in becoming God's sons, following the True Parents in attending God in order to restore the ideal of God's Kingdom on earth. P. 2133. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 1.

I have come to realize that God does not sit on a throne of glory and majesty. Instead, He is a God of deep sorrow and profound suffering, who has endeavored to save His children that fell into hell. P. 2134. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 2.

In the spirit world, light as bright as the sun radiates regardless of day or night. It is always day on the sun. That is how it is in the spirit world. The light of love in the spirit world is unchanging. P. 2137. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.

When creating the universe, God did so with absolute faith. He went on to create us to be the absolute partners of His love. Absolute obedience means investing ourselves completely to the extent of total self-denial. P. 2138. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 2.

In a family with ten members including the grandparents, the one most exemplifying altruism will be its center. P. 2139. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 2.

The International Blessing Ceremony that you have witnessed is God's strategy to fundamentally resolve the racial, religious, and national conflicts which have resulted from the Fall. Five colors of skin coming together in harmony as true brothers and sisters and true husbands and wives is the actualization of the holy ideal of establishing "One World Under One God." P. 2142. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 3.

If anything other than love were to be recognized as the most valuable thing in the universe, men and women would fight each other to try to claim it for themselves. Once we realize that love is the highest value, however, we can strive to live for and become one with each other, sharing the happiness of possessing love together. P. 2142. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 3.

The universe is filled with all beings existing as pairs at their level, but ultimately, they follow the principle of being absorbed into higher levels of love. Thus, minerals want to be absorbed by plants, plants by animals, and finally all of creation by human beings. Through this process they ultimately reach the position where they can experience the essence of true love, which is the love that is nearest to God, the origin of love, who created everything with an intrinsic nature to provide value to a higher level. P. 2143. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 3.

Nevertheless, for them to share absolute love, they must have absolutely only one partner, not two. P. 2144. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 3.

A young man and woman may say, "We are so much in love that we could give our lives for each other," but that does not mean this love is true love. If God is not present, then it is not true love. True love always centers on Him. To become His son or daughter, we first need to connect with His love, life, and lineage. P. 2145. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 3.

We should risk our lives for others at least three times within our lifetime. This is how we can indemnify the selfish acts involved in the Fall of Adam's family, the crucifixion of Jesus, and the persecution directed against the family of the returning Lord. P. 2145-6. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 3.

Conversely, without children, wives, and younger siblings, parents, husbands and elder siblings cannot find the position of the owner of love. P. 2147. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 3.

I came to realize that God does not sit on a throne of glory and honor, but rather is a God of sorrow, lamentation, and suffering, endeavoring to save His children who fell into hell as a result of the Fall. P. 2148. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 4.

The path of Jesus' suffering on the cross was the same path of tribulation that God Himself walked. In such a situation of trial and tribulation, Jesus desperately prayed, "Father, forgive them; for they know not what they do." P. 2150. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 4.

God's ideal of creation should have begun in the temperate zone civilization of spring, but due to the Fall of our first ancestors, human civilization degraded to the level of savages and started in the tropical zone. P. 2151. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 4.

The time will come for religious leaders who speak for God's will to rise to prominence. Religious leaders are prophets, who must declare God's will on earth and indicate the direction that humanity must go. P. 2152. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 4.

Until now, democracy has advocated human freedom and liberation. In contrast, we must advocate God's freedom and liberation. When this issue is resolved, human liberation and the recovery of human freedom will follow automatically. P. 2153. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 4.

I have spoken in public more than ten thousand times, and presented a true view of the world, of life, and of history based on the principles of "Godism." This content, in its entirety, has been translated into twelve different languages and published in a series of some three hundred volumes. It was not brought to light as a result of some kind of comprehensive

literary research or academic study, but is comprised of the fundamental and essential answers I found while freely traversing both the visible and the invisible worlds. P. 2156. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 5.

In Unification Church terminology, the homeland does not refer to a single nation like the Republic of Korea, but to a global nation. Actually, the word “Globalism” is a word used in this corrupted, fallen world, and I really do not like it. The philosophy or teaching that seeks for this homeland is called the cosmos-centered ideology. That homeland is not the Republic of Korea. God does not want the Republic of Korea, the United States, or the communist nations. P. 2159. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 5.

If and when the nation that the Unification Church desires is established, we will have to take down and dismantle the Unification Church signboard. And when the world that the Unification Church desires is realized, then we will have to dismantle the nation the Unification Church established. P. 2159. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 5.

We have to form a unified people that no nation of the world can match, and then we have to create a united nation with a single faith so indomitable that no other religion in the world can match it. Centering on this kind of ideology, North and South need to become a unified nation. Without doing that, God's nation, namely the sovereignty of a heavenly nation that we can proudly proclaim to the entire world, will not be born. If we cannot establish the homeland, we will not be able to have a nation that can center on God and surpass the nations of Satan's world. Without that nation, we cannot chastise the satanic nations of the world. We cannot push them away. We cannot do that with just a religion, with the Unification Church. P. 2163. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 5.

Each of you needs to understand that the lifestyle of the sons and daughters of Heaven requires being able to stand in the position to surpass the authority of the satanic world, that it requires attaining and preserving the position of glory in the course of life. If God wants to love His sons and daughters, that is the kind of son and daughter He should love, don't you think? If He loves sons and daughters who do not even match up to Satan, He cannot really preserve the dignity of His fatherhood, can he? I want you all to keep that conviction in mind and make a new determination that you will live every single day of your life marching ahead, hand-in-hand with the entire world. The way I see it, that is where the foundation for the unification battlefield is determined. P. 2166. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 5.

So if you, in the position of a special emissary, send a request that you urgently need such and such, don't you think He would brave troubles and difficulties from every sector to send it to you? In the same way, if you have that conviction and recognize that you are sons and daughters of God's special glory and ask, saying, “This is what I need, Father; please make it possible,” then it will come into being. P. 2166. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 5.

If you cannot establish that nation, you will have to sit and see your parents shedding their blood, your wife shedding her blood, your children spilling their blood. P. 2167. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 5.

In other words, you have to be able to fight and win over Satan in whatever situation you are put. If you go into society, you have to be able to fight and win over Satan in any environment that society presents you with. If you go out into the nation, you have to be able to step forward, take responsibility for that nation's worst problem, then fight and win over the satanic forces involved.

Do you think that Satan, who has given God such a hard time for six thousand years, is just going to quietly say, “Oh boy, I have had it. I think I will just give up,” then lower his eyes and crawl away? Don't you yourselves value even a wash cloth too much to just throw it away? Before you throw it out, you will probably turn it over, inspect it, and even smell it. What I am saying is that Satan will not just give up and go away like that. That is why he keeps on putting up such a stubborn fight. So, we have to fit with and match up with the center. Even Rev. Moon of the Unification Church will be broken the day he deviates from the center. If the direction is not right, then you cannot make any progress. P. 2168. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 5.

Can we save this nation just with what is left over after we have had our fill? Can you spend your energy worrying about what you wear, when you will eat, what you get around on? We have to clear the path and pioneer the way with our bare feet and bare hands. P. 2168. Right. Ch.6. Sec. 5.

When it gets dark and it is time to go to bed, you have to fall asleep together with that nation of hope. What I am saying is that, although that nation does not exist at present, as a citizen of that nation you need to go to sleep for the sake of that nation, and when you wake up, wake up as one of the workers who is working to create that nation. Do not use your five senses if you cannot use them thinking of that nation. P. 2172. Left. Ch.6. Sec. 5.

#### **BOOK 14 – A LIFE OF TRUE FILIAL PIETY**

People of filial piety will think of their parents first when something good happens in their lives. In the fallen world people think of their spouse first when they see something good. However, unless you buy something precious for your parents first, you cannot buy something for your spouse.

In the same way, a man should first buy clothes for his parents, and then for his wife and children, before buying clothes for himself. He should attend and serve his parents when they eat. P. 2179. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 1.

When God tested the many peoples of the world, He could not find a people of virtue and fidelity with a spirit of loyalty and filial piety as high as the Koreans. Therefore, He chose Korea and is intently watching the nation. P. 2180. Left. Ch.1. Sec. 1.

People talk about the way of loyalty and filial piety, but do not really understand the meaning. Children must establish the parents as the center of the family in the same position as God; then, becoming one in mind and body in front of the unchanging love that the parents have for their children, they always receive one hundred percent through their heart and body, and adapt to them one hundred percent. What do we call sons and daughters who take such a position? We call them children of filial piety. P. 2180. Right. Ch.1. Sec. 1.

God does not just want filial sons and daughters. He wants a filial family. You must understand that He wanted a family of patriots. He wanted a family of saints. He wanted a family of divine sons and daughters. This is His anguish. P. 2188. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 2.

Filial sons and daughters must fulfill their filial duty while their parents are alive. Loyalty also must be fulfilled when the king is alive. It is no use at all trying to fulfill your filial duty after your parents have died. Loyalty is of no use at all when the king is dead. P. 2189. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.

Filial children must always unite with their parents' heart and direction. People going the way of filial piety are not those who behave in a way far different from their parents. If the parents go east, then the children should go east. If the parents go west, then they should go west. If the parents have given a certain direction, but suddenly make an about-face, then the filial child must follow them. There should be no dissent from this. If you follow your parents when they leave home, and each time they order you to turn back and go home, you should turn to go back but then do an about-face and follow them anyway, even if this happens ten times.

If you protest, you will not be able to fulfill your filial duty. If parents behave in a strange way, their children also must behave likewise. If parents give an order, then the children must follow accordingly, even if it means behaving strangely. Acting in a strange manner in itself is not good. You may think that your parents are doing things unknowingly, but actually they know what they are doing. Therefore, you should follow.

Why would parents behave in a strange way? Their strange behavior would serve to identify the most filial child out of all the filial children. If there were one hundred filial children and the parents acted strangely enough, the most filial of them all would eventually emerge. The filial son, who absolutely accommodates his parents' orders at the risk of his life, even though he knows his parents are being capricious, can even become the king of all filial children. P. 2189-90. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.

Sometimes, families split up over a very small amount of money. If a brother says, "Brother, you are you, and I am me. I lent you a million won, so why don't you pay me back? I don't like love or anything else. Money is the most important thing!" Then he is losing all the blessing he was born with. Let us say he was born with the fortune to become a millionaire or a billionaire. If he had love, then all the blessings of the universe would have come and built a nest for him; but instead the universe will run away without pity, saying, "My! What a miser he is!" This is the reason people like filial children. P. 2190. Left. Ch.2. Sec. 3.

Filial children are those who would love and embrace their parent as their own baby even if he or she became incontinent or worse. Such children will go to heaven. P. 2190. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.

Among your sons and daughters, there is a filial child, an ordinary child and an unfilial child. There are three kinds of children. I conclude that if you want to become the most filial child, you must compete against God and not lose. P. 2190. Right. Ch.2. Sec. 3.

Consider the case of two sons: one had been pious and the other impious until their parents' dying day, but in the parents' dying moments the filial son becomes impious while his brother repents and turns pious; in that moment their positions will be reversed. P. 2193. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.

When people think they have fully discharged their duties of filial piety and loyalty, they actually cease to become filial children and patriots. The person who complains, saying, "I am a filial child. I am a patriot. Why do you not recognize me?" is the person who is retreating. P. 2195. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 1.

Which of these two sons is truly a son of filial piety, one who conscientiously prepares and serves his mother's meals or the one who has nothing to offer but his love? How impious would it be if the filial son offered love, but had no food for his hungry mother to eat? However, when the mother hears her son tearfully saying, "I am such an unfilial son to be here," she will regard that as greater devotion than being served with food. Then, who is the more filial son: the one who brought rice or the one who brought love? Love can transcend time and space twenty-four hours a day. Rice, however, cannot do this. P. 2197. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.

People who just think, but do nothing, are worse than those who do not even think at all. Truly they are thieving scoundrels. Such people, when all else fails, have no other recourse but to steal. P. 2198. Right. Ch.3. Sec. 2.

Someone who says, "I am a filial child. I am doing this and that to become a filial child" is a fake filial child. People who live for others and forget that they have done so will take their places among the ranks of filial children. P. 2200. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 3.

The filial child is the person who can accept what he dislikes more than what he likes. The person who sacrifices his precious love in order to fulfill his filial duty to his parents will be able to go anywhere in Heaven, and if there are twelve pearly gates, then not one of them will be blocked to him. All the gates will be wide open. P. 2201. Left. Ch.3. Sec. 3.

To become God's son, you would have to become the filial son on the world level, as well as becoming the filial son on the family level. P. 2203. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 1.

Even if you do stumble, and you think that there is no way to go before the Lord, remember that God is alive. He has been enduring until now, and so, when you stumble in the cause of loyalty and devotion while yet alive, He will raise you up and open the way for you to at least pray, and He will show you the direction how to live from then on. Then, He will send you people who can help you. P. 2210. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.

Without a global foundation of absolutely divine children, namely God's children, God cannot descend upon the earth. Alone, God cannot do anything providential on the earth. This is why we refer to Him as a sorrowful God deserving of pity. P. 2211. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 2.

Jesus said that no matter what kind of difficult circumstances we encounter, we have to have endurance in order to overcome. He said that we have to have more loyalty and filial piety for God's will than sinners show towards evil. This is the basis of the nine fruits of the Holy Spirit which is taught in Christianity. If you live a life of love, then happiness and peace will arise; and through endurance, mercy and goodness will arise; and through a life of loyalty, gentleness and humility will arise.

Jesus emphasized that in order to get rid of all their evil elements, people who are in the realm of the Fall should adopt heavenly love, heavenly endurance, and heavenly loyalty. This is a practical philosophy that can realize the ideology of the Kingdom of Heaven, but do you have this love of Christ in your hearts today?

Also, do you have endurance and the heart of loyalty? Jesus represented God's heart and was the incarnation of His love. Even when he was on the road to Golgotha, he was the master of endurance who was worried about the suffering of all humankind, and he was the representative person of loyalty who was more loyal to God than any other person in human history. P. 2211. Left. Ch.4. Sec. 3.

He (Jesus) fulfilled his duty of filial piety and loyalty when he prayed, "My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me, nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt."

That meant that Satan was unable to invade the standard of devotion, even if Jesus died, and through this he could resurrect spiritually and set the standard for the spiritual Israel. P. 2212. Right. Ch.4. Sec. 3.

But there will be obligations to your parents as well as to your nation. If you are torn between these obligations and are unable to fulfill both of them simultaneously, where should your priorities lie? Between filial piety and loyalty to your nation, you should give preference to the latter. This conforms to the rule of law. The reason for this is that the nation encompasses the families and parents. P. 2214. Right. Ch.5.

In my viewpoint, the person who is the most devoted and loyal will become the leader. Only that person is qualified to become the leader. A person with a doctorate is not automatically qualified to become the boss. P. 2215. Left. Ch.5.

Before you love your country, you have to love your parents, first. You have to become filial children. Only in this way, can you love your country, and it is on the road of loving your country that you can love the world. It is only by loving the world that you can love Heaven. P. 2217. Left. Ch.5.

The age of indemnity has now passed, and from now, you will be able to establish a bright tradition commensurate with the level and extent of your activities. This will become your estate. P. 2220. Left. Ch.6.

Here, an heir of the heart, who can stand representing his parents, has to appear. An heir of the heart is not an heir who just talks, or someone who merely appears to be an heir, or one who is having a good time; but rather the one who takes ownership of his parents' sadness and suffering, agonizes and grieves in place of his father, and struggles to establish the way to manifest the duty of loyalty and filial piety before Heaven. Only such people can stand before Heaven. P. 2223. Left. Ch.7. Sec.1.

What is a loyal subject? Is it someone who is devoted to his king? No. Know that a loyal subject is someone who knows how to live for the people in the same way that he lives for the king. Then who is a filial son? It is not someone who is devoted to his parents. Know that a filial son is someone who lives for his siblings in the same way that he lives for his parents. Who are true divine children, God's sons and daughters? Divine sons and daughters are those people who seek to live for the sake of everything that is of God, in the same way that they live for His sake.

That's why I say that I will go the way of the divine son. I love God, but I also love all humankind, even my enemy, America. Only when I do this, will God, who has been watching, be able to say to me, "My son!" I am not a son of any particular country. I was born in Korea, but I am not Korean. I am not a son of Korea. A person to whom God can say, "My son!" is a person who lives for all of humankind in the same way that he lives for God.

Such a person is God's son. Since God is a being who forgets Himself and cares for people, someone who does likewise is His filial child. You have to know this definition clearly. We are people who start out on the path of filial children, progressing by way of the path of loyal subjects or patriots, to reach the path of divine sons and daughters. We are not aspiring to achieve sainthood. P. 2223. Left. Ch.7. Sec.1.

However perfect a person may have become on the individual level, it is of no use if he is unfilial to his parents. P. 2226. Left. Ch.7. Sec.2.

Even if you have been impious and failed to love Mother Nature, your birth parents, or the spirit world and God, by virtue of attending me as your True Parent, you will receive the qualification of a filial child. That is why you have to follow me dauntlessly. P. 2226. Right. Ch.7. Sec.2.

Be loyal to your society, your church, and your family. What kind of place is the church? It is the place that helps you to form and nurture your character. Due to the Fall, the church is needed. It does not stop at the family and society.

The restoration of character does not happen by itself. Graduating with a doctorate from some university does not mean that your character has been restored. That is why we need the church.

Then, where should you practice loyalty? Do so in your church, before your family. P. 2227. Left. Ch.7. Sec.2.

## **BOOK 15 – THE LIFE OF AN OWNER OF CHEON IL GUK**

Did He exist from the very beginning, or did He come into being? Even God has grown. We must know this. How can we know it? We can know it from the principle that causes everything that resembles God's original nature to start as a small cell and grow. So what has made God grow? He has grown because of love, an absolute love wherein God is the subject partner of love and human beings are His object partners. P. 2233. Left. Ch.1. Sec.1.

The depth of true love incorporates everything, going all the way back to the beginning when God was born. You have no idea how deep it is! It started at the very origin of His existence Even God has grown and developed. To the very depth of His beginning, He has had the same origin as true love. At the point of origin, God was not first; love was first. P. 2233-4. Right. Ch.1. Sec.1.

The reason is that love precedes life. Why did God begin to exist? He began to exist because of love, and He exists in order to love. Had there been no concept of love, there would not have been a need for God to come into being. P. 2234. Left. Ch.1. Sec.1.

For this reason, nothing good exists anywhere if God is not involved. The same applies to our work: Anything done without God is fraudulent and cannot be trusted. This applies to everything. P. 2234. Right. Ch.1. Sec.1.

The conscience chastises the body, and tries to make it conform to the mind. Here is where bitter conflict and struggle always takes place within oneself. No one, though, can conquer the body without welcoming God in. Only through the power of God's true love and truth can the mind as subject partner take command of the body as its object partner and realize the ideal of oneness with God. This is the perfect human being that religions speak of. P. 2236. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.

“I am the way, the truth, and the life.” Love is missing here. P. 2236. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.

True love can control even God. Oneness attained through true love gives rise to proprietary rights. Whatever belongs to your beloved will belong to you. We cannot change our love partners at any time or any place. The ownership of love should be absolute. P. 2237. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.

Where do God and human beings become one? In holy matrimony. They become one centering on God, who is the center of original true love. It means that God enters the heart of Adam and the heart of Eve. The marriage of Adam and Eve is the marriage of God's body. It is His marriage. The external position is the body, and the internal position is the mind. P. 2238. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.

Above and below refer to our filial duties, front and rear refer to our fraternal duties, and left and right refer to our conjugal duties. P. 2239. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.

Conjugal unity must take place with man as the subject partner. P. 2239. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.

Ch.1. Sec. 3. Lots of great words about Adam and Eve.

Eve broke the original ideal for both Adam and herself. For this reason, it was necessary for Mary, who represented the fallen Eve, to bring forth the restored Eve who could become the wife of Jesus, who came as the second Adam. This restoration could not be carried out by Mary alone. Since the archangel assisted God in creating Eve for Adam, an archangelic figure would also be required to assist in the re-creation of Eve after the pattern of the second Adam. This is how Eve could have been restored.

Then Jesus and the restored Eve were to have become one. If servants in the position of the angels and the archangel had created a daughter in the position of Eve, centering on Jesus in the position of Adam, then would this daughter not have been God's daughter, unrelated to the Fall? Mary and Joseph were to have blessed this daughter of God with Jesus. This would have been the union of God's daughter and son.

Since Eve caused the problem of the reversal of dominion, women must bear responsibility for it. Hence, Mary had to restore the archangel, Adam, and also restore Eve back to the position she was in before the Fall. She was to do all this. This is why women have to reverse dominion. Mary's task was not just to restore those three figures but also to recover even God's heart. P. 2242-3. Right. Ch.1. Sec.3.

This is the ideal of creation for Adam and Eve, and it is God's ideal. When they each become one with Him, neither can claim to be higher than the other. Higher and lower do not exist. The only thing that exists is perfect oneness. Yet, for a

number of reasons, the distance between God and Eve, and between God and Adam, became greater. P. 2244. Right. Ch.1. Sec.3.

Had Adam and Eve not fallen, they would have loved each other, but they would have loved each other in place of God. Thereby their daily lives would have manifested that of God. If they had liked something, He, too, would have liked it internally. If they had been sad, He, too, would have felt sadness internally because love would have belonged to Him and them. Being one love, it could only be like this. P. 2245. Left. Ch.1. Sec.3.

At the time that Adam and Eve lost their family, they lost themselves, and the three archangels also fell. They need to be restored. Thus, what the Vatican failed to do on the Italian peninsula must be accomplished on the Korean peninsula. The Vatican had a significant role to play in preparing for the returning lord, but it failed. P. 2246. Left. Ch.1. Sec.3.

Had they become perfect, their mind and body would have become one naturally. P. 2248. Left. Ch.1. Sec.4.

The family that settles as God's substantial form on earth and multiplies through the oneness of love becomes His family, His offspring, citizens, and world. When this happens, the mind-body conflict caused by the Fall disappears instantaneously. P. 2248. Right. Ch.1. Sec.4.

What should blessed couples do if they fight? They should call their physical children and then their spiritual children to ask their forgiveness because the former represent Abel and the latter represent Cain. Having gone against the tradition that Cain and Abel should follow, they did not make Cain and Abel unite but did the opposite instead, and therefore must repent before them. Such a time will come. We share a common destiny. When the children do something wrong, they must obtain their parents' forgiveness. If the husband, their father, does something wrong, he must beg them, and his wife, for forgiveness. This is the true family with true love at the center. P. 2250. Left. Ch.1. Sec.4.

We must plant the seed of true love within the family for the world to become the expanded form of a true family. In this context, there is no concept of religion. There will be no need even for the Tenchi Seikyo spiritual path. P. 2250. Right. Ch.1. Sec.4.

The fulfillment of His will and the realization of His ideal of creation comes with the completion of the four-position foundation. What happens when the four-position foundation is completed? Heaven and earth find their rightful positions and settle for the first time. P. 2252. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.

Everything must pass through a central line. Why does the human nose run from up to down vertically? It is because the center must not be lost. We see in the face that the eyes symbolize God and the mouth symbolizes all the things of creation. This is why there are thirty-two teeth. Four times eight equals thirty-two. This refers to the number of the whole creation. The number four represents north, south, east, and west; and eight represents all numbers. It is a multiplier. So four times eight equals thirty-two; this symbolizes the whole creation and means that we should eat all the things of creation. When we speak, our mouth inhales that which is external and exhales that which is internal. P. 2252. Right. Ch.2. Sec.1.

Yet, if parents simply give birth to children and then do nothing to educate them, it would all be of no use. The children must be educated. They have to grow. P. 2253. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.

Fidelity in such a love-centered family requires that love be absolute. It is absolute in all its relationships. An invasion of even one of these relationships cannot be allowed because that would mean the destruction of all of them. Thus, each family member within the four-position foundation must guard against the possibility of love being invaded even to the point of self-sacrifice. The most fearful thing is for the foundation of love to be broken. P. 2254. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.

It is not intended that they have just one or two children. When the era of Adam and Eve arrives, it is intended that they have many children to the north, south, east, and west. P. 2255. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.

In the past, people of faith left their families behind, but now they must rebuild the families they left behind on a higher dimension and establish them as victorious families. Otherwise, they cannot enter heaven. Just by forming a family does not mean that we can enter heaven on the basis of that family alone. We can only enter heaven through forming a four-position foundation. P. 2255. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.

You may feel happy about having a wife, but I do not think like that. Women and children are not happy, either. Rather than being happy, you must shoulder a cross. The subject partner must make the object partner happy. If he has children, then he must also make them happy. He must shoulder these three great crosses. That is why restoring the four-position foundation is the most difficult thing. It is like conquering the world. P. 2255. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.

Each of your children is born into the family of God as a precious beacon of hope that He has established by sacrificing innumerable prophets and patriots through six thousand years of history. When we consider that the children of each family bring with them the ultimate end to the holy task of completing the four-position foundation, our feeling of gratitude toward these children must increase day-by-day. P. 2255. Right. Ch.2. Sec.1.

When Noah built the ark, do you think his wife did a good job helping him? Do you know how much his children criticized him? No, Noah packed his lunch and ascended Mount Ararat to build the ark saying that God was about to judge the earth not just for one day, but for 120 years. Think about whether his wife helped him. Since his wife did not help him, the children did not help, either. You must become one with True Mother. P. 2255. Right. Ch.2. Sec.1.

In that garden, He wanted to take naps and walk around. This is the kind of God He is. P. 2257. Right. Ch.2. Sec.2.

In the spirit world, there is no reproduction. Families in the earthly world are where citizens of the spirit world are produced. P. 2258. Left. Ch.2. Sec.2.

Those without children will not have such a reciprocal realm. Such a reciprocal realm can only exist when you have children. You should try to have at least twelve, the number of months in a year. P. 2258-9. Right. Ch.2. Sec.2.

Therefore, even if a man and woman have created this vertical line, they will not be able to serve God in the heavenly world if they do not have children.

Only those who have had children and loved them are able to serve God, the ideal Subject of dual characteristics. They also need to have children in order to serve the True Parents. If those who cannot bear children are going to adopt a child, they must train themselves so that they will be able to love this child even more than if they had given birth to it. This is difficult to do. Hence, in the Unification Church, we teach people to bear many loving children. P. 2259. Right. Ch.2. Sec.2.

The Holy Spirit in Christianity is feminine. It had the responsibility to give birth to two worlds spiritually and substantially, and then to raise them up. In the same way, the Unification Church's blessed wives must be responsible for two worlds. They must create citizens of God's Kingdom who become able to denounce the satanic world and govern its people. P. 2261. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.

You should not raise your children to become people like you. You should be determined to wholly inherit True Parents' tradition now in order to raise the descendants who will be able to live in God's future world. This is my single cherished desire.... You must embrace your children, protect them, and be joyful. Do not let them go the same course as descendants of the Fall. P. 2262. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.

In educating your children, do not teach them to love only their parents. Say to them, "We are loyal citizens and patriots who love this nation. We love our nation. We are not parents who are patriots, but patriots who are parents." P. 2262. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.

Children should serve their mother and father in God's stead as parents greater than even the True Mother and the True Father. In this way, your family can be such that your children will bow to you before they bow to the True Parents. P. 2262. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.

The individual salvation that people strove for until now pertained to the archangelic world. Ownership of the true family is in heaven. P. 2263-4. Right. Ch.2. Sec.4.

The cherished desire of young women and men is to form ideal families that is, true families. Here, "True family" refers to a family that God likes. Hence, the most important thing is your understanding of God. P. 2265. Left. Ch.2. Sec.4.

Man and woman cannot unify their minds and bodies without true love. P. 2265. Right. Ch.2. Sec.4.

The mission of Blessed Families in the Unification Church is to create the realm of the Sabbath where they, as parents, would want to welcome even beggars as their own children to live with them. P. 2266. Left. Ch.2. Sec.4.

This is why men must become God's internal nature, putting themselves in the position of His heart, and women must become His external form. Then the two must become one. They expand one level and become one. The mind-like aspects of these two become internal nature and their bodily aspects become external form, and then, for the first time, they bear fruit. This is how the realm of mind-body oneness centering on God is formed. P. 2266. Left. Ch.2. Sec.4.

If you go to heaven now, you will not see God. It is necessary that God enter the minds of the True Parents after they have accomplished everything and gone to the next world. When this happens, He will take on a body and we will enter an age when He will be able to move and rule over everything in the universe. In other words, He will take on a holy external form. P. 2266. Right. Ch.2. Sec.4.

Then to what degree should the hearts of fallen humanity be engrafted? They must first lay a base where they have been engrafted to their Father, having lived with and inside of him; then they must grow in the womb of their Mother and be born and serve their Parents. It does not end there, however. While living together with their Parents, through them they need to form a connection of love to their clan, who in turn connect to their tribe, the tribe to the people, the people to the nation, the nation to the world, the world to the cosmos, and finally the cosmos to God. This basis must be laid. Only then would God acknowledge, "You are My children!" for He would not call anyone who formed a connection of love centering only on themselves, His children. P. 2273. Left. Ch.3. Sec.1.

You should follow that path back to your hometowns with tears in your eyes. If you complain, you will be cursed. Your ancestors would strike you, and your sons and daughters would know no moment of peace. The time is coming when it is up to you whether you will be afflicted or cured. P. 2275. Right. Ch.3. Sec.1.

The True Parents are essential for bringing the family under control. Since Satan has completely destroyed the family, there must be a Savior to bring the chaotic family under control. Satan has brought the nation to ruin. His ultimate purpose is to destroy the family and bring down the nation so that God's own family and nation can never be established. The True Parents are needed to take the family back from Satan, and the Savior is needed to recover from Satan all that he has destroyed, and create the nation desired by God. P. 2276. Right. Ch.3. Sec.1.

When praying to God, you cannot call upon Him directly. You have to go through the True Parents. And, end your prayer by offering it in the name of the True Parents. This is not as simple as it seems. It is not as simple as adding on the words out of habit. P. 2278. Left. Ch.3. Sec.1.

Vast numbers of people were sacrificed in the course of God's providence to establish the True Parents. God created a great number of religions in His dispensation and they typify the angelic world, Cain, Abel, the child by a concubine, the adopted child, the stepmother, and the adoptive parents' positions. Finally, He created the True Mother and True Father religion. P. 2280. Left. Ch.3. Sec.2.

Are not your bodies and minds in conflict? Why is that? It is due to the Fall. How then can they be reunified? Without true love, they cannot unite. P. 2281. Right. Ch.3. Sec.2.

Hence, if the Unification Church buys something, it should not be resold, until after establishing that the True Parents themselves have cast it away. Once I have bought something, I would never resell it even if I were reduced to a beggar's status. Those who sell our possessions behind my back in disregard of this understanding will all be caught in the end and suffer the consequences. P. 2282. Right. Ch.3. Sec.2.

Live with the notion that you will make, from what God has created just for the fun of it, souvenirs to take to heaven with you. This is what the True Parents are doing as they explore nature and all the sights in the world, be that on the sea, the five oceans and six continents, or in the rivers, mountains, and various other land forms.

Will you also follow their lifestyle, working to liberate the realm of nature from its lament, with God's love, or will you choose to stay stuck in a big city, centered on yourselves, destroying the environment, creating pollution, and being parents who block the way for your children to develop their soulfulness? After considering the two options, Unification Church members naturally choose to follow my way of loving nature, and so it will be possible to build the ideal Kingdom of Heaven wherein cities will be decentralized and naturalized, and where we will live in harmony with nature. P. 2284. Left. Ch.3. Sec.2.

I had no intention of creating another separate denomination. Nevertheless, God's message was rejected and opposed by established religious groups. I was left with no choice but to lay another foundation through the toils of the last forty-three years. P. 2284. Right. Ch.3. Sec.3.

On that foundation, my wife and I have founded many organizations so that the principles of the True Family could be examined and utilized in the fields of academia, media, religion, the arts and industry. These organizations create examples and models by which the world could be restored through indemnity. P. 2285. Left. Ch.3. Sec.3.

I have no wishes or thoughts for myself, except to practice absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. If asked to die, I will head straight for death. Even at the risk of my life I will not turn back. P. 2288. Left. Ch.3. Sec.3.

To inherit God's love, life and lineage when being reborn, one should be totally void of relationships to the love, life and blood ties of the satanic world so much so that one is completely unconscious of them. P. 2289. Left. Ch.3. Sec.4.

Within the family, children should unite with their mother, and then with their father, but the father is a false father. Therefore, when the True Father comes, the mother and children must unite with him and educate the false father. In this way, the whole family can be unified and the original family restored. The mother and children must save the father. P. 2291. Left. Ch.3. Sec.4.

If the member states of the United Nations were to unite with the True Parents in a decision at the UN, they would be restored overnight. All that would remain to be accomplished would be their blessing. P. 2291. Right. Ch.3. Sec.4.

You are serving the True Parents and are called their children. You can now be their children; not their legitimate children (in the traditional and legal sense), but also not adopted children (for adopted children have no blood relationship with the parent). You now stand in the position of the child by a concubine. If this position were not established there would be no way for us to save this world. P. 2292. Right. Ch.3. Sec.4.

However strong the snow and ice may be, all will melt away because it is spring. P. 2301. Left. Ch.4. Sec.1.

In that sense, the deeds and lifestyle of Blessed Families today fall short of an acceptable standard. You should be aware that you have been within the devil's lair, and now you should strive to create your own realm of liberation. Otherwise, if you embrace your children merely out of habit and just long to be happy, everything will perish. P. 2302. Right. Ch.4. Sec.2.

When Jesus went to Jerusalem he looked at a fig tree on the road and, seeing that it bore no fruit, cursed it. Immediately, it withered away. That is the kind of consequence you would face if you are without fruit. What have you prepared for God in building the future nation? P. 2302. Right. Ch.4. Sec.2.

The Nation of Cosmic Peace and Unity (Cheon Il Guk) needs sovereignty, territory and citizenry. Thus, the Coronation for God's Kingship last year was the restoration of sovereignty. Next, the rallies for the Settlement of God's Fatherland (Homeland) constituted the restoration of territory. Then you are to register as the citizens of Cheon Il Guk. Do you understand? That is why you must have the Cheon Il Guk identity cards in order to be its citizens. Sovereignty, territory and citizenry are necessary for creating a nation. P. 2305. Left. Ch.4. Sec.2.

How many citizens of heaven you restore will be the most precious thing for you. P. 2319. Left. Ch.4. Sec.4.



A time will come when millions will be witnessed to in a day. P. 2320. Left. Ch.4. Sec.4.

How many sons and daughters have you assembled who will follow you to heaven? You shouldn't be doing anything other than that. Even if you had billions in gold and lived affluently, all that would pass away. P. 2321. Left. Ch.4. Sec.4.

If you passionately convey the Word, you can bring in an explosive harvest. P. 2321. Left. Ch.4. Sec.4.

You should not have your hair hanging out like a quail's or let your hair turn gray like a wagtail's. P. 2322. Left. Ch.4. Sec.4.

Hence, each family is a production line that creates the citizens of heaven. Being a production line, it should churn out many children. People's rank and position of glory in heaven are determined by the number of citizens they bring into the heavenly nation. If you raise many children, and if you raised twelve or even twenty-four types of people, you would stand in a position of having loved all types of human beings. P. 2322. Left. Ch.4. Sec.4.

You and I are in the position of mind-body unity; that is, husband and wife, parents and children being of one heart. Oneness-in-mind cannot be achieved in a state where one stands above and the other below. If parents are above and their children are below, they cannot be of one heart. Only when both are positioned on the same level of equal footing can they be one in mind. In other words, only when both their internal and external relationships are in one plane can they become one-in-mind. This holds true for a couple as well: they can be of one heart only at a place where their internal and external, front and back relationship is horizontal, but never if it is vertical. P. 2323. Right. Ch.4. Sec.5.1.

As the establishment of all pure things, pure people and pure love on pure land is the ideal of creation, the purpose of creation, we need to be freed from ourselves in order to achieve this goal. To recover pure bodies, it is essential to tear down our current bodies which are serving as the foundation for Satan, in order to drive him out.

Thus, your pure mind, body, substance and mindset should be unified, and next you should escape from the satanic realm to the place that is like the stage of engagement and stay there for three years, after which you can form Blessed Families in the realm of perfection. In the light of the Principle, this process is the ascension to the position wherein you can completely fulfill your human portion of responsibility. You need to know that this is the course of restoration through indemnity. If you do not fulfill this, there is no other way for you to ascend. P. 2326. Left. Ch.4. Sec.5.2.

The lineage, the undefiled pure lineage, must be maintained. Just as God banished fallen Adam and Eve, when the lineage is defiled, one needs to remove oneself completely and fall in line behind fallen humanity to return after them. In the future, only those who have lived their lives safeguarding this purity can take charge of the Kingdom of Heaven. Such people will need to succeed to and inherit the mainstream traditional ideology. Blessed families who fall again cannot be forgiven. P. 2327. Right. Ch.4. Sec.5.2.

Then how can we be reborn? It is by making a condition to be reborn. That condition is to unite with them (True Parents) completely. Hence, women need to obey the commands of the True Mother absolutely. The deplorable matter of not having abided by the commandment in the Garden of Eden must be resolved. You need to practice absolute faith! P. 2329. Right. Ch.4. Sec.5.3.

You should know that it is not just "True Parents." It is "True Parents representing love," because that is the key in spreading the ideology of unity across the universe based on God's unified love. P. 2332. Right. Ch.4. Sec.6.1.

God and Satan are engaged in battle and the question is: who can put an end to this fight? Neither God nor Satan can stop it. Why? Since it was the false parents who brought about this fight, only when those who are more entitled to the position come forth and stand before God can He claim, "I will end it because you are what I wanted," and then Satan can also say, "Since you have triumphed, I will withdraw myself," thus putting an end to the battle. You should realize that because not even God Himself could do it, it has taken such a long time in history. P. 2333. Right. Ch.4. Sec.6.1.

You must pass the standard of the Principle, and not fall short of it. Thus, you should embody the Principle. P. 2334. Right. Ch.4. Sec.6.2.

While claiming to have learned the Principle, you stowed it at the back of your minds and did as you pleased, and consequently have not embodied it. You should not go out witnessing in such a state. Doing so would only make you a fraud, for you are not working with God. Your actions should conform to the Principle.

In the Divine Principle you can find God's heart of six thousand years, as well as the history of my lifelong bloody struggles. It has so much hidden content unknown to you. Reading such a book that is the Divine Principle, as you turned page after page, have you ever stayed up all night praying, reciting and seeking the ladder that would lead you to God's heart? Have you ever underlined any passage, wondering what history lay behind that word or phrase? If you haven't, how can you come here complaining God is not helping you? As such, I cannot but institute a new system. From now on, everything will have to be radically reformed. You can never afford to be ignorant of the sacredness of the vocation of a church leader doing God's work. P. 2335-6. Right. Ch.4. Sec.6.2.

Hence, you can enter heaven only when you have your tribes of 36, 72 and 120 families. Without them you cannot be registered. That is how the Divine Principle works. The 36 Couples insist upon their dignity as such, but can they do so simply as of right? It is a fearful position. You don't know who Satan will grab hold of and attack. P. 2337. Left. Ch.4. Sec.6.3.

Instead of this, You will fell to the darkest of pits. But I guarded it, and though working alone in the darkest of nights, I restored the positions of the servant of servants, servant, adopted child, child by a concubine, and finally the children born within wedlock. I then found the True Mother, set up the position of the True Parents, and dealt with the communist and democratic nations in the Cain and Abel positions. P. 2343. Right. Ch.4. Sec.7.4.

## **BOOK 16 – TRUE FAMILIES AND THE FAMILY PLEDGE**

The Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven was to have started from 1952, but all ended up in failure. This is the reason why the providence was prolonged for forty years and the Unification Church had to go through a historical course of atonement. P. 2353. Left. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.

You cannot recite the Family Pledge when your minds and bodies are in conflict or when husbands and wives are fighting. You cannot recite it without having any children. The unity of mind and body, husband and wife, and parents and children, should be centered on God's love. This is the place where true harmonious families can enter the heavenly kingdom. Only those who are united in true love can recite the Family Pledge, which has appeared for the first time in history. P. 2354. Left. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.

Even if one does not understand the providence of the Old and New Testament ages or the Divine Principle, it is possible to go to heaven if one passes through with absolute faith, absolute love, and absolute obedience centering on God. P. 2354. Right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.

Until now, Christians have thought that only Adam and Eve fell. They did not know that Adam's family fell. Christians did not know that Adam and Eve's children also fell when Cain killed Abel. P. 2354. Right. Ch.1. Sec.1.1.

So, we needed the Family Pledge. We need it. We will need it. Which one is it? We need it! That's the way it is. It will be the motto for thousands or tens of thousands of years. It's amazing! P. 2356. Left. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.

God does not always stand in the vertical position or human beings in the horizontal position. In love, the vertical and horizontal positions become one. P. 2357. Left. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.

This is the reason people in the world nowadays are saying, "The world has now become a global village." My teaching says that the world has become a global family. P. 2359. Right. Ch.1. Sec.1.2.

Forty years after the start of my public ministry, I founded the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. In order to accomplish this goal, we need to have something like a constitution as an absolute regulation, the Family Pledge. There had never been such a term as Family Pledge throughout history. It is the Family Pledge that points us in the right direction and enables us to complete the heavenly kingdom. P. 2361-2. Right. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.

The Family Federation will govern the world based strongly on the Family Pledge. P. 2362. Right. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.

All the people in the world must perfect themselves on the family level. What must be done to reach perfection? Your families must be the ones who restore the fallen families through atonement offerings. This has to be achieved by each and every family worldwide, making an effort through the Family Federation. Perfection has to be achieved by Adam and Eve. God cannot do it for them. True Parents cannot do it for them. P. 2362. Right. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.

Since the Family Federation came about based on God's will, the world community will have to form a reciprocal relationship with us. P. 2363. Right. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.

Why do we need the Lord at his Second Advent and the True Parents? All the families in history that progressed from individuals, to families, to tribes, to peoples, to nations, and to the world, have never been able to live together with True Parents. Even if England, America, and France had united at the time of the Second Advent right after World War II, humanity would have had to begin from the position of the family led by the True Parents. Families must unite around True Parents' leadership. P. 2364. Left. Ch.1. Sec.1.3.

In May, 1994, I founded the Family Federation for World Peace and Unification. At that same time, the Family Pledge was created in order to clearly establish the boundaries between the satanic world, archangelic world, and Adamic world. The Family Pledge signifies the complete separation from the satanic world. P. 2365. Left. Ch.1. Sec.1.4.

Even those who have not established Blessed Families must recite the Family Pledge together. All people, regardless of their blessing status, must be included. P. 2367. Left. Ch.1. Sec.1.4.

You must recite the pledge before you pray, in order to check you and your family's internal situation, and you should try to correct things accordingly. P. 2367. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.

We must have the national and the world pledges in the future. Of course, the Family Pledge includes all of these. P. 2367. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.

The most important thing in all the verses of the Pledge is true love. True love! What is true love? If you offer your minds and bodies before God, God will return to you even more than you give. Without offering your minds and bodies, you cannot be one with God and you cannot receive things in return. P. 2367. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.

You must recite the Pledge five times a day: as soon as you wake up, after breakfast, lunch, dinner, and when you go to bed. You must judge yourselves and see whether your minds and bodies are united. Then, you must cast off all that is

connected to mind and body disunity. If you are not united with the pledge, you must skip breakfast, lunch, and dinner. P. 2368. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.

Do you want to live for yourself, for your children, or for your spouse? You must live for the sake of your children. Why? This is the principle of creation. P. 2369. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.

The communists in North Korea have tried to build their paradise that way, have they not? When they talk of land reform, the people must be prepared to have all of their land taken away. You must know that the time will come when such a thing will happen on the heavenly side too. It will happen in the not too distant future. P. 2369. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.

If all people live according to and conforming to the constitutional laws, then everything will be fine. Furthermore, churches will not be necessary. As long as all people live by the laws and render devoted service to the nation, things will turn out well. P. 2369. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.1.

Family Pledge represents my history. You should know that the words spoken in the pledge explain how I established my family. P. 2370. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.2.

Whose family is the pledge talking about? My family. My family is the central family. P. 2370. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.2.

A heavenly nation has two kinds of laws. One is the king's law and the other is the national law. The heavenly kingdom on earth also has royal laws and earthly laws. God's family must observe all four laws. To do this, you must understand all of them. You must be respected when you go into the royal palace, respected when you go to the nation, respected when you go into the earthly palace, and respected when you go to the earthly nation.... The goal of my course is to gain victory by earning respect through the natural surrender of others. P. 2370. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.2.

The Family Pledge was not intended to be recited by just anyone or by ordinary people. P. 2372. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.3.

Then what do people need? They need their parents, spouses, brothers and sisters, and children, because achieving proper family relationships is the formula for entering heaven. Without experiencing the Four Great Realms of Heart, the Three Great Kingdoms and the Realm of the Royal Family mentioned in our Family Pledge, you won't be able to enter heaven. P. 2373. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.3.

Everything exists in relationships. You should not be dogmatic. You will only create bad feelings by forcing your own views. If you want to create the ideal world of love centering on the Principle, you need to have an internal foundation in your relationships. Without that, progress will not take place and love cannot grow. P. 2373. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.3.

Is it easy or difficult to create mind-body unity? It is more difficult than turning the whole world upside down. Perfecting yourself is even harder than that. The question is how to achieve mind and body unity? Even though it is difficult, should we do it or not? In spite of the difficulty, to make it easier for you, I have built the highway. I have made the highway by building bridges and excavating tunnels straight through mountains. If I had only thought of myself, I would not have had to suffer like that. I toiled to save the people of the world, you and the world. It was not to save myself that I toiled. P. 2374. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.

If I couldn't finish what I wanted to say, I would talk in my sleep. I would give the speech I was supposed to give the next morning in my sleep at night. True Mother knows all of my secrets. I do not go to sleep just because the night came. I am never silent, I am always speaking. P. 2376. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.

Jesus should have had 120 disciples, centering on and united together with the family of Zechariah. He should have formed and liberated a nation with all the court officials, but he could not. That is the tribal messiah's responsibility. P. 2376. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.4.

If you fight with your spouse, you are not qualified to recite the Pledge. You must understand what a miserable and heart-breaking situation it is to be unable to recite the Family Pledge. The Family Pledge is your shield. P. 2377. Left. Ch.1. Sec.2.5.

If those who have families do not recite the Family Pledge, they are fakes. This is the standard your family must reach. Those that do not are failures. You must understand this point and become the standard. Those parents who can do this must memorize the Pledge completely, divide it into sections, and teach it to their children. They must also get people to follow them. P. 2377. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.5.

Just like the Israelites who had to carry the Ark of the Covenant in their forty-year wilderness course, the Unification Church members are now entering the heavenly kingdom carrying the Family Pledge. The Israelites departed from Egypt for the sake of establishing a nation. In the same way, you must have a clear sense of establishing a nation. Like the Israelites, we have no nation of our own anywhere in the world. Where should that nation be? It should be Korea. P. 2378-9. Right. Ch.1. Sec.2.5.

God is not some being that exists in our fantasies or imagination. God is not abstract. God lives with us in our daily lives as the master of our lives. God does not exist just to be served. God lives in a reciprocal love relationship with people, together, as part of the community. It is an unbelievable reality. P. 2379. Left. Ch.1. Sec.3.1.

God does not live up in the air somewhere distant from our lives. He lives in our lives, P. 2379. Right. Ch.1. Sec.3.1.

How many times in a day do you experience that God exists? How many times during the twenty-four hours of a day do you feel God's presence? If you really want to be saved by serving God and others, then feeling God's presence for just one or two hours out of twenty-four hours a day can't be enough. You must feel the need for God more desperately than you feel the need for air. You need God more desperately than you need water. God is more precious than food. You need God more than you need water. Do you feel this? P. 2379. Right. Ch.1. Sec.3.1.

Those who can feel God's joy and sorrow cannot possibly become evil or break the heavenly law. A man who is like this can never be seduced, even by the most beautiful woman in the world. There is no way that he can be pulled by that level of temptation. P. 2380. Left. Ch.1. Sec.3.1.

Why do so many young men and women break with their families these days? Because the love that is one with heavenly law is missing from their families. P. 2380. Left. Ch.1. Sec.3.1.

There are laws in serving God. When people break the laws, God can be extremely furious. Just as a word from a child can either wound his loving parents' feelings or please them, God too, since He loves humankind, can feel deeply hurt. That is why I, too, try to make God happy in my own way. P. 2380. Right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

Just as people seek the ones who care about them, God is the same way. The way you can capture God's heart is to think about God, and serve Him more than others do. God will seek someone like that. P. 2380-1. Right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

You have to be foolish to walk this course. Loyal citizens in history are seen as somewhat foolish people. They have some bear-like quality in their nature. Even after their arms are cut off, they will say, "Oh, this isn't cut enough; it needs to be cut a bit more." You must have such a foolish nature in you. When bears and wild boars are shot and have some part of their body dangling and getting in the way, they will bite off that part and run away. You should have that kind of foolishness in you. P. 2381. Left. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

What should you do to receive parents' love? You should love everything your parents love. Only after that can you receive their love. In your physical family, if you want to be loved by your parents, you must love everything about them. You must know this. Those who want to be loved by their parents, without doing this, are thieves. If you irresponsibly try to take over everything your parents value, you cannot be loved. P. 2381-2. Right. Ch.1. Sec.3.2.

...you must leave behind descendants of goodness. If you can't do this, you have nothing to offer to Heaven. P. 2384. Right. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

No matter how difficult it may be, parents must create for their children, who were born from the Blessing, an environment that is not contaminated by the sinful world. Even if parents have to be sacrificed, we must create such an environment for the second generation as soon as possible. We must hurry. P. 2385. Left. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

Your families must not be conventional and secular. You should not think simply that your families are the way they are, and that things will be better in the future. They should already be perfect. The problem is in the now. Only when the past and present are perfect, will your future be perfect too. The fact that Adam and Eve did not have even one day of perfection in the Garden of Eden is proof of the Fall. The ideal is if the past, the present and the future would all be consistent. You must be able to offer yourself in the present. God's hope for you is that you become the eternal foundation on earth. That will be the concluding point of history. P. 2385. Right. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

The reason that the Israelites perished after fulfilling the restoration of Canaan, was that they were accustomed to and assimilated into their environment. They put all their effort into living well, eating well and acquiring luxuries that led to their downfall. They intermarried with wealthy non-Israelites. Also, they lusted after power and thirsted for knowledge. In the end, they were completely assimilated into the Canaanite culture and sold off their spirit as the chosen people. This was the cause of their destruction. P. 2385. Right. Ch.1. Sec.3.3.

*Cheon Il Guk* means the Nation of Cosmic Peace and Unity. When you write separately the parts of the Chinese character for *Cheon*, you have two people. This means two worlds. P. 2387. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.1.1.

When we say a husband and wife are one in heart, and a parent and child are one in heart, we mean two people are united in minds and bodies. Oneness in heart cannot occur when one person is in an upper position and the other is in a lower position. If the father is in the upper position and the son or daughter in the lower, they cannot become one in heart. Only if the two are equal, on the same level, can they be one in heart. Therefore, only when the internal and external relationships are level can people be one in heart.

It is the same for husband and wife. Only when they have a horizontal relationship of inner and outer and of front and rear can they be one in heart. When their relationship has one of them in an upper position and the other in a lower position, they can never be one in heart. P. 2388. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.1.2.

That is why human beings, as God's children, were meant to act together and work together with Him. P. 2393. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.2.2.

The reason that your minds and bodies could not unite until now is because you did not have true love. P. 2394. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.2.2.

What is the power that enables mind and body, husband and wife, and parent and child to be united? It is the power of love. It is the power of true love. P. 2394. Right. Ch.2. Sec.1.2.3.

Only through this love can we connect to the entire universe. P. 2395. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.2.3.

The original garden is the ideal garden. It is a world where everyone ministers to each other's needs; a world where a feeling of brotherhood and sisterhood penetrates all parts of the universe. It is not a world of ideals and ideologies like today where people discuss the differences between the feelings held by peoples or the differences between the sovereignties of nations. It is not a world where the differences between people based on economic circumstances or culture are discussed. It is a world where discussion reaches beyond the distinctions between peoples or national sovereignties. It is a world where people discuss matters of the heart. P. 2396. Right. Ch.2. Sec.1.3.1.

However, the original homeland of humankind is the country where the True Parents of humankind were born. This is the original homeland of the entire universe and of this historic world. P. 2399. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.3.1.

In the world of religion all people were commanded to leave their homes and lead celibate lives. However, the Unification Church is the opposite: return to the hometown; go back to the hometown. The message of returning to one's hometown is the best news of all good news. It was never heard before in the history of religion. This is the one-time joyful news of all joyful news. P. 2401. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.3.2.

That is why all the ancestors in the spirit world are separated from one another. Where do they go? No matter how loving a couple they are, when they go to the spirit world they cannot go into God's Kingdom, into the heavenly kingdom. People enter the middle realms of heaven, and go to a place that matches their spiritual level. That is why, if there are ten members in one family, they are all in different places. P. 2406-7. Right. Ch.2. Sec.1.3.3.

Then, how did the languages of all the many nations become different? Due to the Fall of our first ancestors, God separated the people. P. 2409. Left. Ch.2. Sec.1.5.1.

There are things God cannot do as He wants. Even God cannot do whatever He wants in relation to love. P. 2411. Right. Ch.2. Sec.1.5.1.

The members of the Unification Church comprise a tribe. Our blood is connected. If one cries, others must also cry. If one feels joy, others must share in that joy. We are related by blood. We are one people. We have gathered as one, transcended the five races of humankind, transcended the different national standards with different cultural backgrounds, and broken down all these barriers. We will create the new heavenly kingdom. When this people becomes a holy people, the heavenly kingdom can appear, and when you live as the divine sons and daughters of that nation, the heavenly world will be established. On the foundation of that world, the cosmic Kingdom of God on earth and in heaven will be built. P. 2415. Right. Ch.2. Sec.1.5.3.

In Adam's family, the seed blessed by Heaven that was given to Adam and Eve is the seed of marriage. The seed of marriage being thus, when people have families as families of the world, whether that seed is of Adam's family, or whether it is the seed of thousands of generations of descendants, these descendants are equal as they are the fruits that have been harvested from that seed. The seeds cannot be different in quality. If the seeds of a pine tree are spread around the world, from those millions of pine trees billions of seeds will come. Each of those has the same value as the one seed, and they must be able to grow into pine trees. P. 2420. Left. Ch.2. Sec.2.1.1.

Saints founded all of the religions. They are the lords of the religions. They all started out from positions where they could receive instruction from God through practicing devotion and reaching an enlightened state; however, after the religions developed to a higher level, they became more and more secularized.

That is why there are no religious organizations that can guide this world out of its whirlpool of confusion and onto the proper path with very clear and essential guidelines. P. 2434. Left. Ch.2. Sec.2.2.2.

Throughout the course of my life I could never complain. I could never criticize. You must not complain on the path of filial piety and patriotism. You must not criticize. As long as we have a relationship of love with the perfect subject partner, we can neither complain nor criticize. If your husband does wrong, you should take it as your own fault. "This is my fault." If your wife does wrong, you should take it as your own fault. You should not say, "I do not like you." P. 2438. Left. Ch.2. Sec.2.2.3.

Those who never experience a spouse's love, who never experience a parent's love, or a sibling's love, or the love coming from a child, are unable to get close to God. That is why the Unification Church emphasizes the importance of the Four Great Realms of Heart. P. 2442. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.1.

Accordingly, a husband is the one through whom his wife can meet God's ideal son, an elder brother who represents heaven, a husband who represents Heaven and a father who represents Heaven. A wife also stands in the same position in relation to her husband. Such a couple will feel joy by substantially experiencing, through their own children, everything they have invested in those children since birth, just as God has experienced raising the parents themselves. P. 2443. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.1.

Because God's love is absolute, it is a heavenly law that husband and wife cannot be separated. We should restore the fallen world of humankind, a world in which this law has been lost, and return it to the original homeland. P. 2443. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.1.

Up until the present era, Jesus has been fulfilling the role of a King in heaven, but there have never been Parents. Now, with the arrival of Rev. Moon, a new kingship will be established with the Parents at the center; and that is how it will be done on earth as well. P. 2444. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.1.

As we give birth to children and raise them up, we experience, centering on ourselves, God's past history. We come to see the character and shape of the invisible Creator, the invisible first Creator in his infancy. P. 2444-5. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.1.

God himself has also been growing. God created, through the form of the substantial Adam and Eve, the children, siblings, husband and wife, and parents that he envisioned in His invisible formless mind. By experiencing them grow as siblings, husband and wife, and parents, God experienced them as his own second self, and through this, He feels infinite joy as the God who has perfected His ideal of true love. P. 2447. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.1.

Centering on the lineage passed down through the eldest son's line, this foundation of heart will be passed on into the eternal future for a thousand, for ten thousand generations, as the lineage of the royal family. P. 2450. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.2.1.

The three generations are together one unit, one category, and this is why we have to attend our grandparents like we attend God, to attend our parents like the king and queen of the world, and the grandchildren, we have to attend like they are the kings and queens of the heavenly Kingdom of Heaven and earth that will come in the future. The grandchildren then, receive love in two layers. The third generation receives love from both their grandparents and their parents. The love is doubled, and it is from here that the Kingdom of Heaven on Earth and in the spirit world comes into being. P. 2451. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.2.1.

Only once the grandparents' love is received does horizontal expansion begin. The love needs to unfold through three stages. This, then, is a model. It is the four-position-foundation. These three generations must be connected, and for this reason, when grandchildren receive their grandparents' love, they are connected to the kingdom of spirit while they are still alive on the earth. P. 2456. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.2.2.

The fact that I, representing the kingship of the nation, the kingship of the world and the kingship of Heaven, appointed you as clan or tribal messiahs means that you are tribal kings. You are tribal true parents. P. 2456. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.2.2.

The Four Great Realms of Heart and the Three Great Kingships must be realized in our families. People who achieve perfection in this way do not need to believe in Jesus, nor do they need Rev. Moon. They can simply go directly before the throne of God. The day that this happens is the day when the realm of the royal family of God's nation begins. So in order for the royal family to begin, you yourselves need to live this way, and then have your lineage connected to mine, through my sons and daughters. Do you understand what I mean? The only way to be connected to the realm of the royal family is when we become related by marriage through my sons and daughters. P. 2460. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.1.

The people that I am looking for are those who can be the royal family of the heavenly kingdom. You have to become seeds. You have to be seeds that can be stored in the granary, passing through the cold north winter for the following year, and in the next spring, with bright sunlight and warm spring breeze can be able to sprout, taking up the right direction, and demonstrating within yourself the creative force. Only when you become such seeds, seeds that demonstrate the power of life, can you become the new buds of life. P. 2462. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.1.

Thus the sons and daughters of the fallen world can stand in the position of the younger children by going through the children of direct lineage, and in this way return to the position of the eldest son, and be able to live together with them in the Kingdom of Heaven on earth and in heaven. This is what we mean by "The realm of the royal family." P. 2462-3. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.2.

The "Realm of the royal family" means dealing with fallen humanity as the second princes and princesses. As in the case of Leah, the first wife of Jacob, when she had to stand in the position of the concubine and Rachel became the first or main wife of Jacob, and Leah had to attend her as such, without going into that position of the concubine, she could not be restored to the side of God. No one knew that this kind of amazing reversal of roles had to take place; that this kind of path of exchange of positions had to be walked. Because this kind of principle is at work within the process of restoration, this kind of phenomena also took place at the time of Jesus. P. 2463. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.2.

Without standing as part of the realm of the royal family, Cain in the satanic world cannot enter the Kingdom of Heaven. Also, Cain should not think that his losing the position of the right of the eldest son means that he is banished, even though he destroyed God's ideal from the position of the eldest son while standing in the realm of the love of Heaven, that is, the second son's realm. Since he comes to stand in the position of the younger son, he enters an environment where he can be loved by his elder siblings and by his parents and, after receiving love from them, he also can enter the unfallen realm, the Kingdom of Heaven. The Kingdom of Heaven is the destination of those who experience the love of the royal family. P. 2464. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.2.

Unless the Cain world on this earth is bound together as brothers, the realm of the royal family will have to continue to remain on the earth. Therefore, you must not forget Cain. It is not your own family that will form the realm of the royal family. Your family has to unite with the Cain families,... P. 2464. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.2.

Because Cain and Abel became enemies on the horizontal level, they have to become one on the horizontal level, too. Because the order of relationship was wrongfully reversed, Abel has to become the elder brother, Cain has to become the younger brother, so that the Cain-Abel brothers are restored centering on the original son and daughter of God. Once this is achieved, they must enter the Kingdom of Heaven together. P. 2465. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.2.

I have built a way for you to rise to the position of the younger brother based on the restoration of the right of the eldest son. Even though the body of Adam, that is, humanity, became deformed and corrupted, the vertical Lord at his Second Advent comes and restores the right of the eldest son, and then, by recognizing and establishing you in the position of the

realm of the younger son, brings both the first Adam and the second Adam to stand in the position of one, unified body. This is the starting point and origin from which the realm of the royal family emerges. P. 2466. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.2.

The Lord at his Second Coming is the “Eldest son, Adam” and the realm of the royal family is the “Younger son, Adam.” P. 2466. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.2.

You will be able to understand from my words just how far you actually are in your relationship with me. I am not simply your teacher, someone whom you can meet in a casual manner or without the right preparation or attitude. P. 2467. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.2.

And although He will recognize them as the royal family, at the same time, he will not simply recognize them as being fully qualified. Rather, God will allow people to enter the realm of the royal family, but for them to actually become members of that royal family, there will need to be a record and history of them having loved Abel more than anyone, based on the principle of restoration through indemnity, from the level of the individual to the level of the entire world. P. 2468. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.2.

The realm of the royal family does not include the children from my direct lineage. My direct children stand in a position that has transcended indemnity. P. 2468. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.3.

At any rate, now, because the fallen world has come to stand in the younger son's position, God recognizes them as being equally part of the royal family on God's side. They are included on God's side, and because of this, any conditions through which Satan or anyone falling under Satan's dominion can accuse God have been totally obliterated. P. 2468. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.3.

What is the realm of the royal family? If you think of yourselves as the children of my direct lineage you are making a bad mistake. From the viewpoint of having completed restoration, there are restored women and restored Cain and Abel, and then there is Cain and Abel within my own direct lineage, Mother and the children. These are two different lines. P. 2468. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.3.

In order for the five billion descendants of Adam alive today to stand in the realm of the royal family, they have to become absolutely one with the children of my direct lineage in a relationship of Cain and Abel. Actually, you are not qualified to just come directly to me. The Blessed families do not belong to Satan, or to anywhere else except to Heaven's side, but they exist as Cain and Abel, the eldest son and the younger son. P. 2468-9. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.3.

The direct children of the Lord at his Second Coming do not have to establish indemnity conditions. They are not restricted or “caught” by indemnity conditions. The indemnity conditions are rather left to the women and the sons of the Cain realm here on earth, not the children of my direct lineage. This also applies to Mother. In fact, the same reality applies also to Sung-jin and his mother. P. 2469. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.3.

Adam was meant to be the eldest son, and Adam's brothers and sisters were meant to be the royal family. If Adam had not fallen, he would have established within his own family his position as the eldest son and his position as the king. At the same time, his younger brothers would have formed the royal family. His elder sister or younger siblings, etc, would have become the royal family, and this right of the eldest son, Adam's right of the first son, would have continued for hundreds and thousands of generation, eventually forming a nation and the whole world, finally becoming all of humankind. P. 2470. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.3.

Adam and Eve were not able to receive from God their education as His son and daughter, as His prince and princess. Nor were they able to receive full education as brother and sister. Had they received their education to be true siblings, all of the world could have been united through their establishing true brotherly and sisterly relationships with all people. P. 2471. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.4.

In the future, a time will come when everything in the fallen world will be bulldozed flat and this ideal will be established. When I go out to the world and teach God's word and teach God's Principle, there cannot be any Koreans or any Unification Church that stands in the way or blocks that road. That kind of resistance needs to be removed, roots and all.

When I look back on the cruel times when I had to abandon my own parents, even cut off my wife and son, I just have to close my eyes and push ahead. When the time comes to take a strong stand in order to establish the traditions of the Kingdom of Heaven, you have to have the guts to do so. P. 2471. Right. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.4.

Those who have inherited the devil's life and lineage automatically connect to hell, and once they are in hell, can they even raise their eyes upward? They cannot even look up. Only after several decades or generations might they be able to take a look in the right direction. Why is this? Because everyone has an original heart that reveres and longs for their parent, and because everyone still possesses the sense of attraction that directs them towards true love, they can look up in the right direction after several years, when their own fortune or destiny correlates to that destiny inside them, so that their minds and bodies resonate with it. The only reason this is possible is because Adam and Eve grew to the age of fifteen or sixteen. If they had not grown that much, then there would be no hope at all. It would be utterly impossible. P. 2472. Left. Ch.2. Sec.3.3.4.

You should establish a historic tradition in which seven generations live in the same house, and hundreds and thousands of people live as one family. P. 2475. Right. Ch.2. Sec.4.2.1.

In an ideal society or nation, all people transcend nationality and race to engage in mutual cooperation, create harmony, and live in happiness. This community is that of an extended family in which people are conscious of being the sons and

daughters of the one God and become a single fraternity under the True Parents. This is the place where Blessed Families, who have restored their lineage, rights of ownership and hearts, realize a world of freedom, peace and unity based on the True Parents' language and culture. They will come to lead lives of interdependence, mutual prosperity and universally shared values within the culture of God's heart. P. 2476. Left. Ch.2. Sec.4.2.2.

The society of the ideal world will be characterized politically by principles of interdependence, economically by mutual prosperity and ethically by universally shared values. The core content of the principle of interdependence is co-ownership based on God's true love. The basic model of the society of interdependence is the family. By co-ownership, I do not mean ownership merely in relation to material possessions, but ownership based on God's love.

In the family, even though all property would be legally held in the parents' names, in practice it would be jointly owned by the parents and children; that is, by the whole family. At the same time, the individual family members are allocated their own rooms, clothing and allowances. In this way, in the family, the whole purpose and the individual purpose are harmonized. When this ideal form of ownership of the family, based on such love, expands to the society, nation and world, it becomes the form of ownership of the ideal society. P. 2476. Right. Ch.2. Sec.4.2.2.

In the ideal world built by the people who have actualized God's love, the whole purpose and the individual purpose are naturally harmonized. Since human beings also have desires and the autonomy of love, they are permitted individual ownership and individual purpose. Even so, they do not pursue unlimited individual possession or an individual purpose that undermines the whole purpose. Perfected human beings are meant to own property commensurate with their position and circumstances according to their conscience and original nature.... economic activity will have its aim and focus not in the pursuit of profits but rather in overall welfare. P. 2477. Left. Ch.2. Sec.4.2.2.

Yet if we understand political units to be an expansion of love-centered family relationships, then antagonistic relationships would not exist among candidates. Their candidacy would be rooted in a calling to serve, and they would be nominated by their constituents, who would relate to them as siblings serving one God as their common Parent. After due process, the final result should be determined in accordance with God's will, in which no improper considerations can be involved. That is to say, it will be a method by which the winner is finally decided through a solemn process of drawing lots with prayer. As the result is determined by God's will and heavenly fortune, everyone would come to accept it with gratitude and joyful hearts. P. 2477. Right. Ch.2. Sec.4.2.2.

Even when we have realized the unified four great realms of heart, this will not be the end of it. We have the responsibility to bring the world back through that family. We have to take care of the insecurities and anxieties of the world, the chaos of the satanic world, and the unhappy environment that is not free. P. 2478. Left. Ch.2. Sec.4.3.1.

You do not know the secrets submerged in the background of the Unification Church. No one knows and no one needs to know. If you knew them, how burdened you would be!

True Parents are suffering like this, and you would shed tears while even having lunch. I do not want this. Neither God nor your Parents want you to reflect on their suffering in an effort to remove all historical sorrow caused by indemnity conditions. P. 2486. Left. Ch.2. Sec.5.1.1.

We have to grow. Staying still and stopping are connected to death. When you joined the Unification Church, how glad you were to have heard the Word! Are you rejoicing even more now? It is God's heart, hope and will to transcend individual joy and globalize it. I am also going that way. Thus, my joy is not my own. I am striving to globalize it. Everyone started from God but became self-centered. Your life of faith has been blocked by your own way. P. 2493. Right. Ch.2. Sec.5.2.1.

It is advancement: becoming new people, people who are alive. Is your heart that rejoiced when you joined the Unification Church growing bigger and bigger or diminishing? It should grow bigger. Strive to advance. Living things grow. Those who fail to grow will die. They will be lost because they will have lost their value in relation to the spirit world. This is why I am telling you to strive to advance. P. 2494. Right. Ch.2. Sec.5.2.1.

Don't think of the Unification Church as a habitual faith like the established Christian churches. The Unification Church is not like that. This is serious. P. 2495. Right. Ch.2. Sec.5.2.2.

The years leading up to the year 2000 are the time in which we must decisively bring about total mobilization. Since we are urging such rapid progress, rapid collapse will occur in this world, and everything will be separated and fall down into hell; you will see this clearly with your own eyes before you die. P. 2495. Right. Ch.2. Sec.5.2.2.

If you want to ride on heavenly fortune, you first have to know what kind of place the way of heavenly fortune is. It is not a place everybody likes and where they enjoy themselves eating and drinking. It is a place everyone dislikes. It should be a place where you are always grateful for everything and give glory to God while carrying out your responsibilities. Those who stand in such a place can ride on heavenly fortune. So you should achieve victory without fail. P. 2500. Right. Ch.2. Sec.6.2.

Who are our communities? They are the Cain world. We need them. Will you go to the Kingdom of Heaven by yourselves? Some day this will surely come to pass: everyone in our community will say, "You fools! Are you trying to go to the Kingdom of Heaven all by yourselves? Is this what God's will is all about? When we said we did not like the Unification Church, you should have admonished us with a stick even until our death. Why didn't you?" P. 2502. Left. Ch.2. Sec.6.3.



You should understand what the True Parents have done and become a family that embodies them; just as heavenly fortune follows the True Parents around when they move, you should unite completely with them and become families that move heavenly fortune and convey Heaven's blessing to your communities. You cannot do it by yourselves alone. You should create families like yours around you. You are pledging to be such a central family. P. 2502. Right. Ch.2. Sec.6.3.

Your ancestors in the spirit world will make you pay indemnity unless you now work to convey God's blessings to your communities. They will resist you. They will keep blocking your way and interfere with you. They will say, "You fools, how is it that your actions don't conform to what you pledged?" This is why I am telling you to give out everything. If you don't do it, you will get stuck in the spirit world. P. 2503. Left. Ch.2. Sec.6.3.

Where the original lineage is lost, the culture of heart does not emerge. Culture is linked through history. The culture of heart should be a network of the family, society, nation, and world. "Our family pledges to perfect the world based on the culture of heart, which is rooted in the original lineage..." This means that the issue is how to leave a pure lineage behind. Otherwise, our world, based on the culture of heart, is not realized. P. 2504. Left. Ch.2. Sec.7.1.

What is the original lineage? Centering on Adam and Eve, you should bequeath the lineage of the pure direct children of the True Parents in such a way that it will last for thousands of years. The environment we live in is extremely impure. Yet, keeping your fidelity and chastity, you can come to the place where you can receive all the highest blessings even amidst such an impure environment. This is the special right that can be given by Rev. Moon alone. No one else can do it. No one else is the fundamental root of the lineage. P. 2504. Right. Ch.2. Sec.7.1.

The original lineage is no longer a fallen lineage. It is a lineage that has severed itself from Satan's lineage and restored the Fall through indemnity. It is the result of engrafting. When pulled out from the fallen root and engrafted to the true root, the third generation will receive the seeds of the original lineage. The seeds from the engrafted tree should become original true olive trees. For this, three generations have to pass. Are you confident? This is serious. You are wild olive trees, aren't you? Wild olive trees are to be engrafted; they cannot go back and be born from their mother's womb. After going through three generations, when sowing the seeds harvested from there, they should come out as true olive trees. Three ages must pass. This is serious. P. 2504. Right. Ch.2. Sec.7.1.

In the Unification Church, the most important thing is not to defile the original lineage. That means your descendants should not defile their lineage in the same way that Adam and Eve did when they fell. P. 2505. Left. Ch.2. Sec.7.1.

The original lineage centering on love. The lineage! The Blessed Families of the Unification Church should make special devoted efforts to become the first generation ancestors so that their descendants will not be defiled for thousands of years to come. From their generation on, no Fall can be tolerated. If they were to fall, they would not be forgiven because they would become a representative family who has fallen on the global scope, which is hundreds of times more serious than the first Fall. Such a fearful age is coming. That is why I cannot say these words. Right now, I cannot say conclusive words. God cannot face sons and daughters born to fallen Blessed families. This is the sin of all sins, and therefore, God just cannot face them, even if they were put upside down in hell. You should know that when it comes to the love of a man and a woman, veering from the path brings fearsome consequences. P. 2505. Right. Ch.2. Sec.7.1.

When you join the Unification Church, you are not encouraged to live a good worldly life. However, even if you have lived in utter misery and suffering, and you die and fall on the street so miserably that even dogs do not pay attention to you, there will be a day when flowers will blossom in the place of your death. There, all the holy people will gather around and create a city. My idea is that I drive the Unification Church members to horrible suffering for the sake of the nation and for the sake of the world, and raise you as filial children and patriots. If you refuse to go, I will have to slap you. Even by kicking you, I will have to help you overcome the current misery and the current difficulty. This is love. P. 2508. Left. Ch.2. Sec.7.2.

The world based on the culture of heart is the world of the original culture of God, and the world of the culture of perfect Adam, who is not related to the Fall. There are not two cultures; only one. It is the world of unification where there is only one language, one set of customs, habits, and one tradition. You should know that only in such a place can God live together with individuals and in their families. P. 2508. Left. Ch.2. Sec.7.3.

The world based on the culture of heart is the world of the original culture of God and the world of the culture of perfected Adam, who has nothing to do with the Fall. In such a world, there are not two cultures; there is only one. Let it be the world of unification such that there is only one language, there is only one set of customs, there is only one set of habits, and there is only one tradition! You should know that only there will God live together with the individual and in families. P. 2509. Right. Ch.2. Sec.7.3.

Although you live in the same realm of daily life as the True Parents, if you still do not have the same culture and use the same language and alphabet, there would be nothing that is more shameful. P. 2510. Left. Ch.2. Sec.7.3.

If you do not use the unified language, a cultural gap arises as in the past. This is quite a serious problem. P. 2510. Left. Ch.2. Sec.7.3.

You should live with fun and joy in true love. You should be able to communicate with animals, harmonize with all things, and harmonize with God. Then there will be no such things as national boundaries. There will be no different cultures. It will be the culture of love. Since the culture of love is the culture of hobbies, a life of pursuing hobbies is love. Loving your spouse and loving your sons and daughters can be extended throughout the scope of the world. All are the expansion of your family and the realm of your object partners, celebrating culture. That is why the world based on the culture of heart where you enjoy yourself is the culture of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. It is the culture of hobbies.

Such a culture of hobbies is the original culture of love, unrelated to the Fall. The culture of hobbies is the culture of the Kingdom of Heaven on earth. P. 2510. Right. Ch.2. Sec.7.3.

God is not always vertical and human beings are not always horizontal. The vertical and horizontal are to become one. P. 2512-13. Right. Ch.2. Sec.8.1.1.

There can be only one set of True Parents. They are the only Parents of humankind. The Completed Testament Age is the age in which the True Parents appear for the first time ever in human history. P. 2514. Left. Ch.2. Sec.8.1.1.

The twenty years from 1972 to 1992 is the period when we went beyond the mission of Christianity, centering on Korea. On the national level, I fulfilled the indemnity condition that corresponds to the Old Testament Age. The Holy Marriage of the True Parents in 1960 and our activities in America on the global stage corresponds to the relationship between the Old Testament Age and the New Testament Age. They have the same contents. Through this, the worldwide settlement of the True Parents was concluded in this period. That is why I announced the Completed Testament Age, which is the time when we can live with God. P. 2514. Right. Ch.2. Sec.8.1.2.

Absolute obedience means not having a sense of "Self". Even God is no exception to this. P. 2518. Right. Ch.2. Sec.8.2.1.

Thus, absolute obedience means that even your own way of thinking should not exist. P. 2519-20. Right. Ch.2. Sec.8.2.1.

If you fail to practice absolute faith, absolute love will not take root. P. 2522. Right. Ch.2. Sec.8.2.2.

So from now on, God is pushing forward the history of restoration, without indemnity conditions, according to His will and with His full authority. The question is whether or not you are suitable; whether or not you can stand in the reciprocal relationship with God. Once you have made the determination and become one with the standard of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience, everything will work at lightening speed, becoming equal. Once you become true sons and daughters standing in the position of oneness with God and God's absolute love and lineage, the entire universe will be bequeathed to you as His sons and daughters. Then, everything belongs to you. When you become one in love, everything becomes yours. P. 2523. Right. Ch.2. Sec.8.2.2.

Obedience has no sense of self. P. 2525. Left. Ch.2. Sec.8.2.3.

It is true love, alone, that can unite the mind and the body that were divided through false love. So, you should practice true love. You should absolutely obey the command of the True Parents. It is possible only on that basis; it is impossible below the standard of absolute faith, absolute love and absolute obedience. P. 2526. Left. Ch.2. Sec.8.2.3.

In this case, God Himself also unifies. There is nothing that can separate the oneness of God and humankind in love. There is no force that can tear them apart. P. 2528. Right. Ch.2. Sec.8.3.1.

What is it that I, Rev. Moon, have agonized over the most? It is the question of how to form the oneness of God and humankind in love. P. 2529. Left. Ch.2. Sec.8.3.2.

Then, is God close or distant? Is He visible to your eyes or not? Why is He invisible? It is because He is too close. If something is too close, you cannot see it forever. Even in the spirit world, you cannot see Him. This, however, does not mean that He is not there. He exists. There is no one who has seen love, nor is there anyone who has seen air. P. 2529. Left. Ch.2. Sec.8.3.2.

The Fall of Adam and Eve is the immoral sin that forsook God's ideal of true love. Adam and Eve, before the Fall, needed to keep the commandment, but fell at the stage of immaturity during the growth period. The union of the first love of the human ancestors, since being the perfection of God's love as well at the same time, should surely have been a continuation of happy feasts in which God, Adam and Eve, and all things naturally became intoxicated in joy and blessings. It should have been a happy ceremony in which God's love, life, and lineage formed a beginning and settled in human beings. However, they, instead, covered their lower parts and hid behind the tree, trembling in fear. This is because they, in violation of the heavenly path, perpetrated the immoral relationship that gave rise to the source of false love, false life, and false lineage. P. 2533. Left. Ch.2. Sec.8.3.3.

Satan entered where God should have. Adam and Eve and Satan married, didn't they? It is the same thing. If Adam and Eve had not fallen, God's true love and humankind's love would have united at one point. P. 2533. Left. Ch.2. Sec.8.3.3.

Established theologies define God as holy, and human beings as profane and sinful. Then, how can God's love and humankind's love become one? They cannot answer this question. The problem is that they think the absolute God can do anything. This was the main reason why Christians shed so much blood wherever they went. Misusing God's commandment, they invaded and seized. They produced dictators. The world, however, does not work like that. From the viewpoint of God's original nature, it cannot be like that. P. 2533. Right. Ch.2. Sec.8.3.3.

Since we have now entered the age of liberation, the universe centering on this earth is rejoicing. How much it rejoices today! Thus, I see that from the beginning of this year until today, an atmosphere of celebration dominates. Now in everything that we try to do, heavenly fortune follows us around and helps us. People strive hard to catch this heavenly fortune, but in our case, it is following behind us and helping us. What this means is that the time has now come when God and the spirit world, our countless ancestors and good people, are mobilized to help this earth; and the age when the realm of liberation can be realized, and everything can be transformed, has arrived. P. 2536-7. Right. Ch.2. Sec.8.4.1.

God's realm of liberation emerges only when society becomes a place where people love more than the True Parents love mankind. Only when the True Parents have such sons and daughters, will the realm of liberation emerge in which they can praise their sons and daughters and rejoice, loving them. P. 2539. Right. Ch.2. Sec.8.4.2.